



1353

The Times' Whistle.



DUBLIN: WILLIAM MCGEE, 18, NASSAU STREET.  
EDINBURGH: T. G. STEVENSON, 22, SOUTH FREDERICK STREET.  
GLASGOW: HUGH HOPKINS, ROYAL BANK PLACE.  
BERLIN: ASHER & CO., UNTER DEN LINDEN, 11.  
NEW YORK: C. SCRIBNER & CO.; LEYPOLDT & HOLT.  
PHILADELPHIA: J. B. LIPPINCOTT & CO.

# The Times' Will



or

## A New Dance of Seven Satires, and other Poems:

Compiled by R. C., Gent.



NOW FIRST EDITED FROM MS. Y. 8. 3. IN THE LIBRARY OF  
CANTERBURY CATHEDRAL;

With Introduction, Notes, and Glossary,

BY

J. M. COWPER,

EDITOR OF 'ENGLAND IN THE REIGN OF KING HENRY THE EIGHTH,' ETC.

LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY,  
BY N. TRÜBNER & CO., 60, PATERNOSTER ROW.

—  
MDCCLXXI.



TO

Charles Edward Donne, M.A.,

VICAR OF FAVERSHAM, AND CHAPLAIN TO THE RT. HON. VISCOUNT SYDNEY, G.C.B.,

THIS VOLUME IS DEDICATED

AS A TOKEN OF SINCERE ESTEEM

BY

J. M. COWPER.



# CONTENTS.

---

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION     ...     ...     ...     ...     ...     ...	ix
NOTES     ...     ...     ...     ...     ...     ...	xxviii
SATIRE 1. (AGAINST ATHEISTS, SABBATH-BREAKERS, ETC.) ...	4
,, 2. (AGAINST SHAMS) ...     ...     ...     ...     ...	22
,, 3. (AGAINST PRIDE, ETC.) ...     ...     ...     ...	31
,, 4. (AGAINST AVARICE, BRIBERY, APOSTASY) ...	41
,, 5. (AGAINST GLUTTONY, DRUNKENNESS, AND TOBACCO)	55
,, 6. (AGAINST LASCIVIOUSNESS) ...     ...     ...	75
,, 7. (AGAINST THE PASSIONS OF THE MIND) ...     ...	92
PREFACE TO CERTAINE POEMS     ...     ...     ...     ...	110
CERTAINE POEMS     ...     ...     ...     ...     ...	112
GLOSSARIAL INDEX     ...     ...     ...     ...     ...	153
GENERAL INDEX     ...     ...     ...     ...     ...	173



## INTRODUCTION.

---

THE Prologue to Hall's Satires opens with these lines :—

“I first adventure, with fool-hardy might  
To tread the steps of perilous despite.  
I first adventure, follow me who list,  
And be the second English Satirist.”

But Hall was hardly correct in his assertion that he was the first to adventure in this perilous path, for Hake's *News out of Powles Churchyard* had been given to the public eighteen years before, though without attracting the attention and obtaining the honour which befell Hall's "toothless satires."<sup>1</sup> His challenge, "who'll be the second English Satirist," was not, however, long unaccepted. In the following year (1598) appeared Marston's *Scourge of Villanie* and *The Metamorphosis of Pigmalion's Image*. Samuel Rowlands also (as well as others) now began to write, and continued to add during

<sup>1</sup> Thomas Timme's *Discoverie of Ten Lepers* appeared in 1592. The "Ten Lepers" are :—

- |                       |                                 |
|-----------------------|---------------------------------|
| 1. The Schismaticke.  | 6. The Glutton.                 |
| 2. The Church-robber. | 7. The Adulterer or Fornicator. |
| 3. The Simoniac.      | 8. The Couetous Man.            |
| 4. The Hypocrite.     | 9. The Murtherer.               |
| 5. The Proud Man.     | 10. The Murmurer.               |

The full title is :—

A plaine discoverie of ten English Lepers, verie noisome and hurtfull to the Church and common wealth : Setting before our eies the iniquitie of these latter dayes, and indusing vs to a due consideration of our selues. Published by Thomas Timme Minister. London, Printed by Peter Short, dwelling vpon Bredstreet hill, &c. 1592. 4to. A to M in fours. Dedicated to Sir William Brooke, Baron of Cobham (*Hazlitt*), Brit. Mus. 4103. e.



many years to the satiric literature of the time. It was in vain that the authorities endeavoured to wrest the "Rhamnusian whip" from the hands of these powerful writers; it was in vain to enjoin "that noe Satyres or Epigrams be printed hereafter." Whitgift and Bancroft might burn them, but they could not stay their re-appearance, and the Satirist found not only materials for books in abundance, but buyers also, and Satires continued to appear long after the death of the "Virgin Queen," whose ministers condemned Hall's *Satires* to the flames, but spared Harington's *Orlando Furioso*.<sup>1</sup>

The date at which the *Times' Whistle* was written is easily ascertained. The Rev. H. J. Todd, who compiled the *Canterbury Catalogue*, though acquainted with the MS., was incorrect in fixing the date "near 1598." The internal evidence is satisfactory upon this point. The reference to Faux and Ravallac<sup>2</sup> gives the first clue: the former died in 1605 and the latter in 1610. Other allusions more to the point are to Coryate's *Crudities*, p. 26, which appeared in 1611, and to Dr Carrier,<sup>3</sup> p. 52. Now Carrier died

<sup>1</sup> See *Notes and Queries*, 3rd S. xii. 436, and Dyce's *Marlowe*, p. xxxviii. note.

<sup>2</sup> Ravallac, a lay-Jesuit, had, it is said, watched a whole twelvemonth for an opportunity to murder the king, Henry IV., and at last stabbed him as he was on his way to the Bastile. The assassin was at once apprehended and carefully guarded from the fury of the populace. Many consultations were held how to punish him, some Italian physicians offering to prescribe a torment which should continue without intermission for three days. "But he escaped only with this, his body was pulled between four horses, that one might hear his bones crack, and after the dislocation, they were set again, and so he was carried in a cart standing half naked, with a torch in that hand which had committed the murder; and in the place where the act was done, it was cut off, and a gauntlet of hot oil was clapped upon the stump, to stanch the blood, whereat he gave a doleful shriek. Then was he brought upon a stage, where a new pair of boots was provided for him, half filled with boiling oil. Then his body was pincered, and hot oil poured into the holes; in all the extremity of this torture he scarce showed any sense of pain, but when the gauntlet was clapped upon his arms to stanch the flux, at which time he was reeking with blood, he gave a shriek only. He bore up against all these torments about three hours before he died."—Howel's *Familiar Letters*, ed. 1678, p. 25.

John Taylor, in his *Complaint of Christmas* (1646) mentions, among others, the following *Saints*: Saint Raviliac, Saint Faux, Saint Garnet.

<sup>3</sup> Benjamin Carrier, or Carier, D.D., was the son of Anthony Carrier, a learned and devout preacher, who caused his son to be strictly educated in the Protestant religion, and afterwards in academical literature at Cambridge, where he became a fellow of C. C. Coll., and a noted scholar and preacher. About

"before Midsummer '1614," probably in May or the early part of June in that year, and hence it is evident that the *Satires* cannot have an earlier date than the middle of 1614; most probably they were not finished before the end of this or the beginning of the following year.

The *Poems* will help us to fix the later date. In 1616 Ben Jonson's *Works*, containing his Epigrams, appeared, and to these there is a reference in the *Minor Poems*.<sup>1</sup> If "R. C." did not see these Epigrams of Jonson's until they appeared in the "Works," then 1616 may be safely taken as the later date, and we are able to fix the *Satires* and *Poems* as having been written between Midsummer 1614 and the end of 1616, sufficiently near to answer every purpose. But we know that it was the fashion then for authors to hand about their writings in manuscript.<sup>2</sup> There is abundant evidence that Jonson did so, and presumptive evidence that "R. C." had seen those Epigrams before they were given to the world.

A reference to Jonson will show this. His Eighteenth Epigram, addressed "To my mere English Censurer," answers objections which had been made to his new style of epigrams, and their being unlike those of Weever and Davis. Epigram xlix. is addressed

"TO PLAYWRIGHT.

Playwright me reades, and still my verses damnes;  
He sayes, I want the tongue of epigrammes;  
I have no salt; no bawdrie he doth meane,  
For wittie, in his language, is obscene.

the time when James I. came to the throne of England, Carrier published one or more sermons, was made a Royal Chaplain, and one of the first Fellows of Chelsea College, founded by Dr Matthew Sutcliff. Becoming very unsettled in his religious opinions, he abandoned the Church of England for the Church of Rome, and removed to Liege, where he wrote his *Missive* to the king, containing the motives which led him to renounce Protestantism. This appeared in October, 1614. He also published a *Letter of the miserable Ends* of such as impugn the Catholic Church, which appeared in 1615. He died, according to Anth. à Wood, before Midsummer-day, 1614, when he "concluded his last day, putting thereby a period to the great imaginations that men of learning had of him and his worth, and to the expectation of other books to be published." For further information the reader is referred to a valuable note in *Notes and Queries*, 4th S. vii. 130; Wood's *Fasti Oxon.*; and Bohn's *Lovvendes*, but the fullest account of Carrier which I have seen is that in Masters's *History of C. C. C. Cambridge* (Camb. 1753).

<sup>1</sup> p. 132.

<sup>2</sup> Dyce's *Marlowe*, p. 65, note.

Playwright, I loath to have thy manners knowne  
 In my chaste booke : professe them in thine owne."  
*Jonson's Works*, folio, 1616.

This reads very much like an answer to that of "R. C." The latter says :—

"Peruse his booke, thou shalt not find a dram  
 Of witt befitting a true Epigram";

and the retort is,

"He sayes I want the tongue of epigrammes;  
 I have no salt; no bawdrie he doth meane,  
 For wittie, in his language, is obscene."<sup>1</sup>

One other point as to date. The poem *In Neandrem* refers, no doubt, to the visit of James I. to Cambridge. Now this visit took place in March, 1615, and gave rise to much good and ill-humoured banter. Francis (afterwards Sir Francis) Nethersole was Public Orator at the time, and, all are agreed, made something very much like a fool of himself. But it cannot be to him that the poem refers. Had he been "struck mute with fear" he would have been spared such taunts as

"Now come we to the wonderment  
 Of Christendom, and eke of Kent,  
 The Trinity; which to surpass,  
 Doth deck her spokesman by a glass:  
 Who, clad in gay and silken weeds,  
 Thus opes his mouth, hark how he speeds.

"I wonder what your grace doth here,  
 Who have expected been twelve year,

<sup>1</sup> I am indebted to Mr Furnivall for the following :—  
 In the Sale Catalogue of Lilly's books is a copy (No. 1557) of the first edition of Ben Jonson's *Workes*, 1616, and  
 On the fly-leaf are the following verses in a cotemporary handwriting :—

"Jonson that whilome brought the guilty age  
 To suffer for her misdeeds on ye stage,  
 Ruin'd by age now cannot hold out play,  
 And must bee fore'd to throw his cards away:  
 For since he so ill keeps what hee earst wonne,  
 Since that his reputation's lost and gone,  
 The age sweares she'll no longer hold him play  
 With her attention; but without delay  
 Will rise, if some fresh Gamester will not fitte,  
 That's furnished with a better stocke of witte."

*Catalogue*, p. 160.

And this your son, fair *Carolus*,  
That is so *Jacobissimus* :  
Here's none, of all, your grace refuses,  
You are most welcome to our Muses";

and more to the same purpose.<sup>1</sup>

In *A New Quaint Ballad of Cambridge*, the author of which is unknown, we read—

"Oxford she a Christ-church had,  
To entertain the king ;  
And Cambridge had a Trinity,  
And scarce one wise therein.  
'Most Jacob'd Charles,' did Cambridge cry,  
'Thou welcome art to us ;'  
An Oxford boy must have untruss'd,  
If he had crièd thus."<sup>2</sup>

In *News out of Cambridge*<sup>3</sup> also the Trinity Oration is dwelt upon ; but we learn in addition that Cambridge not only was guilty of nonsense there, but of absolute failure at St Mary's, as we shall show further on. If, then, the poem *In Neandrem* refers to this event, we have another element in fixing the date, and the years 1614 to 1616 may be accepted as conclusive.

To the question, "Who was 'R. C.'?" I am unable to give an answer. "There were," says Mr Corser,<sup>4</sup> "several poetical authors about this period who rejoiced in these initials, Robert Chamberlaine, Robert Chester, Roger Cocks, Robert Copland, Roger Cotton, Ralph Crane, Richard Crashaw, Robert Crowley, and Robert Croft," and to these may be added Richard Carew, Robert Carliell, and Richard Corbet, successively Bishop of Oxford and Norwich. Several of these may be dismissed at once—they were dead, or wrote later than when these Satires were written ; Carew, Carliell, Corbet, Crane, and others, were alive, but to few of these can this volume be attributed. One well-known scholar<sup>5</sup> thinks Richard Carew was the author ; another<sup>6</sup> suggests Ralph Crane. But after an examination of some of their writings I am reluctantly compelled to say I do not think either Carew or Crane wrote the *Times' Whistle*. If either

<sup>1</sup> *Corbet's Poems*, ed. Gilchrist, 1807, pp. 17, 18.

<sup>2</sup> Inedited Miscellanies. Privately printed, 1870.

<sup>4</sup> *Collectanea Anglo-Poetica*, p. 231.

<sup>5</sup> J. Payne Collier, Esq.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>6</sup> W. Carew Hazlitt, Esq.

did, then it must be confessed that their known writings are far inferior to these Satires. A few lines in *Crane's New Year's Gift* are all that can bear comparison with any portion of this volume:—

——“His great Prouidence (neuer forsaking)  
Did first excite thee to this vnder-taking:  
He bids thee write: rely on him, and send  
Thy prayers vp, and he will fairely end  
This thy desire.”—*N. Y. Gift*, p. 2.

“Euery one  
Moues by his power, liues by his permission,  
And can do nothing if the prohibition  
Of the Almighty doe oppugne; it lies  
Only in him to end each enterprise.”—*T. Whistle*, p. 3.

——“All such labours in his nostrils stinke,  
And therefore shall prove fruitlesse: men intend,  
But God it is that consummates the end.”—*Ib.*, p. 17.

There is a writer, who, but for one difficulty, to be mentioned shortly, would meet all the requirements of the case, and that is Richard Corbet, who was at this time very active with his pen. He was born at Ewell, in Surrey, in 1582, received the rudiments of his education at Westminster School, and in 1598 was entered at Broadgate Hall, and in the following year was admitted a student of Christ-Church College, Oxford. In 1605 he graduated Master of Arts, and became celebrated as a wit and a poet.<sup>1</sup> A man who had the reputation of being a wit and a poet, and who was at one time found in a tavern with the jolly fellows of his day; who at another time, and after he was Doctor of Divinity, was seen putting off his Doctor's gown and putting on a leathern jacket, and singing ballads at Abingdon Cross, certainly would not be found among the ranks of the Puritans: and so we find him undisguisedly opposed to Abbott, at this time Archbishop of Canterbury, and siding with Laud, then rising into fame. In 1616 he was recommended by Convocation as a proper person to be elected to Chelsea College, of which, as we have already seen,<sup>2</sup> Benjamin Carrier had been a Fellow. Even when promoted to a bishopric, Corbet could not forget, and did not choose to abandon, some of his jovial habits, for it is said that he would sometimes take

<sup>1</sup> *The Poems of Richard Corbet*, edited by Octavius Gilchrist, 1807.

<sup>2</sup> p. x, note <sup>3</sup>.

the key of the wine-cellar, and with his chaplain, Dr Lushington, would go and lock himself in and be merry. First of all the Bishop would lay down his hood, with "There lies the Doctor;" then he would put off his gown, with "There lies the Bishop;" and then it was "Here's to thee, Corbet," and, "Here's to thee, Lushington!" The man who could act thus would be the very man to write the lines

"Then straight into the cellar he'll them bring—  
'Tis sweetest drinking at the very spring,"<sup>1</sup>

and to record such a journey as that to Islington to eat cream,<sup>2</sup> described on page 83, and to be credited with writing the song in praise of good ale, which is sometimes attributed to him.<sup>3</sup>

Corbet was certainly no "precisian." But in spite of the want of an austerity befitting his sacred calling, and his hatred of the go-to-meeting portion of Englishmen, it is gratifying to find that the merry bishop died beloved and honoured. "In no record of his life is there the slightest trace of malevolence or tyranny. 'He was,' says Fuller, 'of a courteous carriage, and no destructive nature to any who offended him, counting himself plentifully repaired with a jest upon him.' Benevolent, generous, and spirited in his public character; sincere, amiable, and affectionate in private life; correct, eloquent, and ingenious as a poet;<sup>4</sup> he appears to have deserved and enjoyed through life the patronage and friendship of the great, and the applause and estimation of the good."<sup>5</sup>

Such was the man; and his character seems perfectly consistent with the theory that he wrote these *Satires* and *Poems*. It now remains to present portions of Corbet's acknowledged writings, that the reader may compare them in style and sentiment with what we

<sup>1</sup> p. 60.

<sup>2</sup> Samuel Pepys visited Islington at various times. "My father," he says (ii. 111), "used to carry us to Islington, to the old man's, at the King's Head, to eat cakes and ale." "Back to Islington, and at the King's Head, where Pitts lived, we light, and eat and drunk for remembrance of the old house sake."—(ib. 121.) "Thence to Islington, and there eate and drank at the house my father and we were wont of old to go."—(ib. 183.) "Thence to Hackney. There light, and played at shuffle-board, eat cream and good cherries; and so with good refreshment home."—(ii. 133.) <sup>3</sup> See p. xxxvii.

<sup>4</sup> J. Payne Collier, Esq., writes to me, "It is seldom one meets with such measure and such meaning" as are found in the *Times' Whistle*.

<sup>5</sup> O. Gilchrist's *Corbet*, p. li.

have in this volume. King James visited Cambridge, as before stated, in 1615. Many Oxford men were present, and among them Corbet. Now, although Corbet declared "he had left his malice and judgment at home, and came there only to commend," the opportunity to exercise his wit at the expense of Cambridge was too strong for him to resist, and on his return to Oxford he composed a ballad "To the Tune of Bonny Nell." This ballad, and others which appeared at the same time, make reference to the failure of one or more who were appointed to dispute before the king, but broke down. Corbet, in the ballad, says,—

"Now pass we to the civil law,  
And eke the doctors of the spaw,  
Who all performed their parts so well,  
Sir Edward Ratcliffe bore the bell,  
Who was, by the king's own appointment,  
To speak of spells, and magick oyntment."

*Corbet's Poems*, p. 20.

With this compare the following :—

"IN NEANDREM.

Neander, held a great cevillian<sup>1</sup>  
(Let me not say a Machiavillian)  
Appointed to dispute before the king,  
Struck mute with fear, could not say anything  
Save twas ill luck; for if he had done well  
As we expected, he would bear the bell  
From the whole Academie for the test,  
Tis certaine he had been a knight at lest,  
And made his wife (what she hath lookt for long)  
A Madame. Fortune, thou hast done her wrong  
To hinder his once dubbing of his wife  
Which hath dubde him soe often in his life."

*T. Whistle*, p. 134.

These extracts are given that the reader may have an opportunity of comparing the known R. Corbet with the unknown "R. C." It is probable that the poem *In Neandrem*, and the following lines from *News from Cambridge*,<sup>2</sup> refer to Dr Richardson.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Cevillian, one versed in civil law.

<sup>2</sup> Inedited Miscellanies. Privately printed, 1870.

<sup>3</sup> The following extract is from Nichol's *Progresses, &c., of Jas. I.*, vol. iii. p. 57 (4to, Lond. 1828). "An extraordinary Act in Divinity was kept at Cambridge before King James, wherein Doctor John Davenant was Answerer,



"One morn they went unto St Mary's,  
Where one amongst the rest miscarries,  
For, thinking well for to dispute,  
Propounds the question and falls mute.  
Nor did he blush nor want excuse :  
He follow'd but the Cambridge use."

To quote all from Corbet's Poems which might fairly be quoted would be to occupy more space than can be spared ; a few examples must suffice. See how he treats the Puritans :—

"I needs must say 'tis a spirituall thing  
To raile against a bishopp, or the king ;  
Nor are they meane adventures wee have bin in,  
About the wearing of the churches linnen."

*Corbet's Poems*, ed. 1807, p. 106.

"Routes and wilde pleasures doe invite temptation,  
And this is dangerous for our damnation ;  
Wee must not move our selves, but if w' are mov'd  
Man is but man ; and therefore those that lov'd  
Still to seeme good, would evermore dispence  
With their own faults, so they give no offence.  
If the times sweete enticing, and the blood  
That now begins to boyle, have thought it good  
To challenge Liberty and Recreation,  
Let it be done in holy contemplation :  
Brothers and Sisters in the fields may walke,  
Beginning of the Holy Word to talke,  
Of David, and Uriahs lovely wife,  
Of Thamar, and her lustfull brothers strife ;  
Then, underneath the hedge that woos them next,  
They may sitt downe; and there act out the text.  
Nor doe wee want, how ere we live austeeere,  
In winter Sabbath-nights our lusty cheere ;

and Dr. Richardson amongst others the Opposers. The question was maintained in the negative concerning the Excommunicating of Kings. Dr. Richardson vigorously pressed the practice of St. Ambrose excommunicating the Emperor Theodosius ; insomuch that the King in some passion returned : 'Prefecto fuit hoc Ambrosio insolentissime factum !' To whom Dr. Richardson rejoined : 'Responsum verè Regium, et Alexandro dignum ! Hoc non est argumenta dissolvere, sed dissecare ;' and so, sitting down, desisted from any further dispute."

I am indebted to the kindness of Mr Dennis Hall, of the Cambridge Union Library, for this note, and also for pointing out the similarity of expression used by Corbet in reference to Sir E. Ratcliffe and by the writer of *In Neandrem*. Mr Hall, without knowing that the same question had presented itself to me, asks, "Can the R. C. in question be Richard Corbet, Bp. of Norwich ?"



And though the pastors grace, which oft doth hold  
 Halfe an howre long, make the provision cold,  
 Wee can be merry ; thinking 't nere the worse  
 To mend the matter at the second course.  
 Chapters are read, and hymnes are sweetly sung,  
 Joyntly commanded by the nose and tongue ;  
 Then on the Worde wee diversly dilate,  
 Wrangling indeed for heat of zeale, not hate :  
 When at the length an unappeased doubt  
 Feircely comes in, and then the light goes out ;  
 Darkness thus workes our peace, and wee containe  
 Our fyery spiritts till we see againe.  
 Till then, no voice is heard, no tongue doth goe,  
 Except—" &c., &c.—*Id.*, pp. 108—110.

Another quotation from Corbet may be given here.

" Have I renounc't my faith, or basely sold  
 Salvation, and my loyalty, for gold ?  
 Have I some forreigne practice undertooke  
 By poyson, shott, sharp-knife, or sharper booke  
 To kill my king ? have I betrayd the state  
 To fire and fury, or some newer fate,  
 Which learned murderers, those grand destinies,  
 The Jesuites, have nure'd ? if of all these  
 I guilty am, proceed ; I am content."—*Id.* p. 47.

These quotations, and other passages to be found in Corbet's writings, have the ring and the swing which characterize the whole of the *Times' Whistle*. No other Satires which I have read, by any one "rejoicing in these initials," allow of scarcely any comparison being made ; but with the Bishop the case is altogether different. The same smooth measure, the same frequent references to history, the same intense scorn of Puritans and Puritanism, are found in Corbet's poetry and in that of "R. C." I am aware of the difficulty—there is, I think, but one—which besets this theory. "R. C., *Gent.*," is not the same as the "Rev. R. C.," or "R. C., Clerk." But it must be remembered that Corbet published none of his Poems during his lifetime, and that it was not till some twelve years after his death that any of them were given to the public. The *Times' Whistle* and the *Poems* were evidently written for publication ; but why the intention was not carried out there is no hint to show. If Corbet wrote them, his elevation to high positions in the Church may have led him to abandon the publication alto-

gether, judging that some of the scenes in which the writer took a part would but ill correspond with his ecclesiastical character.<sup>1</sup>

Our Poet, whoever he was, was well read in and made good use of the literature of his time, as well as of ancient classic authors. Shakespeare, Marston, Marlowe, Jonson, Hall, and others, appear to have been consulted to some purpose, but not to an extent to render the author liable to any grave charge of plagiarism. Only a few of these allusions to his contemporaries can be given; the reader will readily supply omissions. And first as to Shakespeare:

*Gloucester.* Suspicion always haunts the guilty mind;  
The thief doth fear each bush an officer.

*K. Henry.* The bird that hath been limed in a bush,  
With trembling wings misdoubteth every bush.—3 *K. Hen.* VI. v. 6.

<sup>1</sup> The MS. is not in the handwriting of Bp Orbet. I have compared it with an autograph letter of the Bishop's in the British Museum.

Another "R. C." appears in W. Bosworth's *The Chast and Lost Lovers*. Mr Furnivall referred to the book for me, and forwarded me the following, which seems worthy of attention:—

"The Chast and Lost Lovers, Lively shadowed in the persons of *Arcadius* and *Sepha*, and illustrated with the severall stories of *Hæmon* and *Antigone*, *Eramio* and *Amissa*, *Phaon* and *Sappho*, *Delithason* and *Verista*: Being a description of severall Lovers smiling with delight, and with hopes fresh as their youth, and fair as their beauties in the beginning of their Affections, and covered with Blood and Horror in the conclusion. To this is added the Contestation betwixt *Bacchus* and *Diana*, and certain Sonnets of the Author to *AVRORA*. Digested into three Poems, by *Will. Bosworth*, Gent.

— Me quoque  
Impune volare, & sereno  
Calliope dedit ire cælo.

London, Printed by F. L. for *Laurence Blaiklock*, and are to be sold at his shop at *Temple-Bar*, 1651."

8vo. A in 8 unpagged; B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, 127 pages, and last page blank (Brit. Mus. press-mark E. <sup>1238</sup>/<sub>2</sub>).

The prose Epistle Dedicatory 'To the true Lover of all good Learning, the Honourable *John Finch*, Esq.' is signed R. C., and says that the Poems are 'the work of a young Gentleman of 19 years of Age, who, had he lived, might have been as well the Wonder as the Delight of the Arts, and been advanced by them amongst the highest in the Temple of Fame.'

The prose address 'To the Reader' is also signed R. C., and contains a hit at Ben Jonson, which may identify its writer with the author of *Times' Whistle*, and the Satire against Jonson. Speaking of Bosworth and his work, R. C. says:

"The strength of his fancy, and the shadowing of it in words, he taketh from Mr Marlow in his Hero and Leander, whose mighty lines Mr *Benjamin Johnson* (a man sensible enough of his own abilities) was often heard to say, that they were Examples fitter for admiration than for parallel, you shall find our Author every where in this imitation."

With this compare

"He, though he had the murderous hand to spill  
Another's blood, himself yet durst not kill,  
And was afraid of others. Whatever stirs  
He judgeth to be men and officers  
Come to attach him, and, his sight unstable,  
Takes every bush to be a constable."—*T. Whistle*, p. 108.

The same idea occurs on p. 94:—

"Each bush doth fright him, and each flying bird,  
Yea, his own shadow, maketh him afraid."

Marston's *Scourge of Villanie* was also familiar to our author:—

"Infectious blood, ye gouty humours, quake,  
Whilst my sharp razor doth incision make."

*Marston's Works*, iii. 274, ed. J. O. Halliwell.

"Let ulcer'd limbs and gouty humours quake  
Whilst with my pen I do incision make."—*T. W.* 2/19, 20.

Marston has

"Camphire and lettuce chaste  
Are clean cashier'd, now sophi ringoes eat,  
Candi'd potatoes are Athenians meat.  
Hence, holy thistle, come sweet marrow pie,  
Inflame our backs to itchin luxury.  
A crab's bak'd guts, a lobster's butter'd thigh,  
I hear them swear is blood of venery."—*Works*, iii. 257.<sup>1</sup>

Compare with the above,

"Provocatives to stir up appetite  
To brutish lust and sensual delight  
Must not be wanting; lobsters' butter'd thighs,  
Artichoke, marrow-bone, potato-pies,  
Anchovies, lambs' artificially drest stones,  
Fine jellies of decocted sparrows' bones.  
Or if these fail, th' apothecary's trade  
Must furnish them with rarest marmalade,  
Candi'd eringoes and rich marchpane stuff.

With allegant, the blood of venery  
Which strengthens much the back's infirmity."<sup>2</sup>—*T. W.* p. 87.

<sup>1</sup> "Virginus vow'd to keep his maiden-head,  
And eats chaste lettice, and drinks poppyseed,  
And smells on camphor fasting."—Hall's *Satires*, iv. 4.

"Lettuce seede being often vsed to be eaten a long space, drieth vp the natural seede, and putteth away the desire to Lecherie."—Lyte's *Dodoens*, f. 573 (1578).

<sup>2</sup> Ben Jonson, *Every Man out of his Humour*, ii. 1, has "Diving into the

Marlowe was charged with holding atheistical opinions, and it would almost seem that "R. C." had him in view in the opening of the first Satire. The lines

"Which by religion dost not set a straw,  
Devis'd, thou think'st, but to keep fools in awe" (*T. W.* p. 5)

seem to be another form of one of the opinions "of one Christofer Marlye," namely, "That the first beginning of religion was only to keep men in awe."<sup>1</sup> Marlowe's *Doctor Faustus* was published, in quarto, in 1604, and again in 1616. The *Times' Whistle*<sup>2</sup> contains a reference to the story of this Play, although it may be said the story was common enough for "R. C." to have got it elsewhere. The whole scene in which Faust cuts his arm, and writes the agreement with his blood, is too long for insertion here, an extract must suffice:—

"*Faust.* Lo, Mephistophilis, for love of thee,  
I cut mine arm, and with my proper blood  
Assure my soul to be great Lucifer's,  
Chief lord and regent of perpetual night!  
View here the blood that trickles from mine arm,  
And let it be propitious for my wish.

*Meph.* But, Faustus, thou must  
Write it in a manner of a deed of gift.

*Faust.* Ay, so I will. [*Writes.*] But, Mephistophilis,  
My blood congeals, and I can write no more."

The mention of Tamburlaine<sup>3</sup> will at once call the reader's mind to Marlowe's *Tamburlaine the Great*.

fat capons, drinking your rich wines, feeding on larks, sparrows, potato-pies, and such good unctuous meats."

Howel, writing from Alicant, says: "I have bin here now these three months, and most of my food have bin grapes and bread, with other roots, which have made me so fat, that I think if you saw me you would hardly know me, such nourriture these deep sanguin Alicant grapes give."—*Fam. Let.* p. 35, ed. 1678.

And John Taylor, *Works*, folio, 1630 (Spenser Society's Reprint): "The Taste plays the Bawd with both Art and Nature, and searcheth through the Earth, Seas, and Skies for variety of temptation; poore and innocent Lambstones, Potatoes, Eringoes, Crabs, Scallops, Lobsters, Wilkes, Cockles, Oysters, Anchoues and Caucare [*Qy.* Caucare], Cock-sparrowes, Coxcome-pyes, . . . doe waite upon the Taste."—f. 259.

"[He] eateth more Lobsters, Artichokes, and Crabs,  
Blew roasted Egges, Potatoes, Maskadine,  
Oysters, and pith that groweth i' th' Oxes Chine."—*Ib.* f. 509.

See also Howel's *Familiar Letters*, p. 215.

<sup>1</sup> See Dyce's *Marlowe*, p. 389.

<sup>2</sup> p. 53.

<sup>3</sup> p. 25.

The Prologue to Hall's Satires has been partly quoted already, another portion of it may fitly come in here :—

“ Envy waits on my back, Truth on my side ;  
 Envy will be my page, and Truth my guide.  
 Envy the margent holds, and Truth the line :  
 Truth doth approve, but Envy doth repine.  
 For in this smoothing age who durst indite  
 Hath made his pen an hired parasite,  
 To claw the back of him that beastly lives,  
 And pranck base men in proud superlatives.  
 Whence damned Vice is shrouded quite from shame,  
 And crown'd with Virtue's meed, immortal name !  
 Infamy dispossess'd of native due,  
 Ordain'd of old on looser life to sue :  
 The world's eye-bleared with those shameless lies,  
 Mask'd in the show of meal-mouth'd poesies.  
 Go, daring Muse, on with thy thankless task,  
 And do the ugly face of Vice unmask :  
 And if thou canst not thine high flight remit,  
 So as it might a lowly satire fit,  
 Let lowly satires rise aloft to thee :  
 Truth be thy speed, and Truth thy patron be.”

That a similar spirit to this animated “ R. C.” may be seen by reading his introductory lines on the second page of this volume.

The references to Jonson's writings are numerous. Compare the Sordido in *Every Man out of his Humour*, with R. C.'s Sordido,<sup>1</sup> and especially Misotochus,<sup>2</sup> and the effect of fine clothes in the same Play,<sup>3</sup> with the character of Moros<sup>4</sup> and the closing lines of our author's second Satire,<sup>5</sup> and it will be seen at once how closely they coincide. Carlo in this Play<sup>6</sup> says, “ Love no man ; trust no man ; speak ill of no man to his face ; nor well of any man behind his back. Salute fairly on the front, and wish them hanged upon turn. Spread yourself upon his bosom publicly, whose heart you would eat in private. These be principles, think on them.”

And R. C.,

“ Another's mind by hate distempered is,  
 Malicing whom in show he seems to kiss.  
 This bare affection causeth dismal strife,  
 Despoileth honour and destroyeth life.

<sup>1</sup> pp. 26, 27.

<sup>2</sup> p. 99.

<sup>3</sup> Act ii. 1 ; iii. 3.

<sup>4</sup> p. 28.

<sup>5</sup> p. 30.

<sup>6</sup> *Every Man*, &c., iii. 1.

Yet in these-days 'tis counted policy  
 To use dissimulation ; villany  
 Masked under friendship's title (worst of hate)  
 Makes a man live secure and fortunate.

These mankind haters, bloody-minded slaves,  
 Which all the world with horrid murders fill,  
 Laughing on those whom they intend to kill."<sup>1</sup>

There is evidence too that *The Puritan* had been seen by the author, but it is only necessary to mention the fact.

I do not think any apology will be required for putting these *Satires* before the few scholars who are interested in the literature of the Shakesperean age. Some casual readers there may be, who will fail to see any advantage in having such books within reach—"precisians," they are unwilling to have their senses polluted with the rough language and the pictures, drawn by contemporary hands, of the vices of their countrymen. For such these *Satires* are not published—they can pass by on the other side, and leave this book to its fate. It is too much the fashion now-a-days to shut our eyes to vice and crime and oppression ; to turn our faces from the dark and squalid portions of our cities, towns, and villages ; to endeavour to hide all the wickedness and misery under which so many groan, to drive them from the garish light of day, and, compelling them to lie in secret and avoid offending our eyes, to turn with self-righteous complacency to the world, and say, 'See how bright and holy all things are ! Vice and misery are not seen in our streets, they do not exist. We manage things better now. A man may walk on the village green, in the beautiful country lanes, in the great streets of our great cities, and see nothing to offend the eye, hear nothing to grate upon the ear. Our writers tell us of nothing but what is pleasant,—of our advances in education, of the improvements which are made on every side.' Yes, it is quite true. We don't like to see vice and misery, we prefer to walk blindfold, and to be ignorant of such things ; but is not the difference between the vices of men two hundred and fifty years ago and the vices of men now, simply a difference of dress ? Then vices were clothed in

<sup>1</sup> p. 94.

fustian, and were not always hidden from the light; now, we clothe them in broadcloths and silks, and indulge in them secretly.

I do not apprehend that any one reading these Satires will be the worse for the reading. They need no apology from me. If they do, then must all who have spent their talent on the Playwrights and Satirists of the time of Elizabeth, James I., and Charles I. have erred more deeply than I can have done. The whole Literature is tainted with a certain coarseness, and to condemn one writer is to condemn all. But let no man despise it and think it poor or bad because it is unlike our own. "It is refreshing to look out of ourselves sometimes, not always to be holding the glass to our own peerless perfections; and as there is a dead wall which always intercepts the prospect of the future from our view (all that we can see beyond it is the heavens), it is as well to direct our eyes now and then without scorn to the page of history, and repulsed in our attempts to penetrate the secrets of the next six thousand years, not to turn our backs on auld lang syne!"<sup>1</sup> I do not apologize for adding to this literature. The reader must judge whether I have done well or ill, and by his judgment willingly I abide.

In this volume there is much that is interesting historically, such as the drinking scenes, the tobacco-smoking customs, the ale-house haunting on Sundays, the manner in which the Puritan was spoken of by the orthodox Churchman. These, and the hints illustrative of the atheism, infidelity, and apostasy which were common then (as well as now), give a value to the book which each reader will estimate for himself. Of the moral and religious tone which runs through the whole of it I cannot speak too highly. In our Dramatists and others this is too often overlaid, or lost altogether. Not so here. Is there a sin, a vice, a crime described? the denunciation of its certain punishment is sure to follow, and that in terms so plain that they who run may read.

The preface to the minor poems in this volume is curious. What occurred to prevent the Satires "and this piece of poetry alsoe . . . . soe sodainlie thrust into the presse" from being given to the world, at present is a mystery, and will probably remain one

<sup>1</sup> W. Hazlitt; Lectures, &c.

for some time to come. Whether the "subsequent endeavours" spoken of ever came to anything is also unknown. The "judicious Catoes" and barking Momists of the time had had their fling at R. C.,<sup>1</sup> and had planted a thorn in his side. His retort calls to mind Ben Jonson's lines :—

" Perhaps, upon the rumour of their speeches,  
Some grieved friend will whisper to me ; Crites,  
Men speak ill of thee. So they be ill men,  
If they spake worse, 'twere better: for of such  
To be dispraised, is the most perfect praise.  
What can his censure hurt me, whom the world  
Hath censured vile before me?"<sup>2</sup>

These poems display the fancies and beliefs which were common at the time they were written. Few of them are without interest of some kind, the best probably being that commencing on page 137.

Of the poetical merits of "R. C." nothing need be said. The book is in the reader's hands. Let it speak for its author. One extract must suffice here :—

" Latro did act a damnèd villainy,  
Adding black murder to his robbery,  
Yet cause 'twas closely done he might conceal it,  
For save himself none living could reveal it.  
But see the just revenge for this offence ;—  
After the deed, his guilty conscience  
Torturing his soul, enforc'd him still to think  
The act disclosed, and he in danger's brink.  
He thought the birds still in their language said it ;  
He thought the whistling of the wind bewrayed it ;  
He called to mind that murder was forbidden,  
And though a while it could not long be hidden.  
Distract in mind, and fearfull in his place,  
Having no power to call to God for grace,  
The devil doth suborne him to despair,  
Tells him 'tis pity he should breath this air  
Which hath been such a villain ; thrusts him on  
To work his own death and confusion.  
He, though he had the murderous hand to spill  
Another's blood, himself yet durst not kill,  
And was afraid of others. What e'er stirs  
He judgeth to be men, and officers

<sup>1</sup> See also the poem *In Momum*, p. 152.

<sup>2</sup> *Cynthia's Revels*, iii. 2.



Come to attach him, and his sight unstable  
 Takes every bush to be a constable.  
 Thus plagued and tortured with despair and fear,  
 Out must the fact, he can no more forbear;  
 For which, according to the course of law,  
 Death's heavy sentence on him he doth draw,  
 And being brought unto the place of death,  
 There in despair yields up his latest breath.

Thus each affection like a tyrant reigns  
 Over man's soul, which letteth loose the reins  
 Unto selfe will, in which so slavish state,  
 Man's sense captived, his reason subjugate,  
 Makes the soul clogg'd, a massy lump of sin,  
 Which following his creation should have been,  
 Like his Creator, pure."—*T. W.* p. 108.

I have taken no liberties with my MS. other than those explained in the footnotes. For the punctuation and the use of the hyphen in some of the compound words, as well as the use of Capital letters, I am answerable. I hope it will be found that I have avoided mistakes as much as it is possible to do, and I believe the reader may rest assured that every reading, and every word, which bears a peculiar look is as it stands in my original. I should have preferred to modernize the spelling throughout, but the laws of the E. E. T. S. allow of no such tampering with texts, and it is right they should not. Once begin, and the reader is never sure that his author's *ipsissima verba* are before him.

I have added to this brief introduction a few notes illustrative of the text, and at the end of the volume a glossary of words and phrases, which is intended not only to assist the general reader, but to save any future Lexicographer the trouble of wading through the volume for an example of the use of any word, phrase, or proverb. Of the use of proverbs and phrases these Satires contain many examples.

The most pleasing of my duties remains to be done. To thank the Dean<sup>1</sup> (too late, alas ! for him to hear) and Chapter of Canterbury for so generously placing the MS. in my hands to copy and use at my own home. And to express the many obligations under which I rest to the Rev. Canon Robertson, Librarian of the Canterbury

<sup>1</sup> Dr Alford.

Cathedral Library, to J. Payne Collier, J. O. Halliwell, W. Bodham Donne, F. J. Furnivall, W. Carew Hazlitt, and Dennis Hall, Esqrs., and my brother, B. Harris Cowper, who have been kind enough to read my proofs, and to afford me many valuable hints and suggestions, as well as to express their satisfaction that I had undertaken to see these Satires through the press.

JOSEPH M. COWPER.

*Davington Hill, Faversham,*  
*March 21, 1871.*

## NOTES.

---

*Puritans and Puritanism.* Page 4. At this day it is scarcely possible to conceive the amount of obloquy which was heaped upon these men. No vice was deemed too horrible for them to commit—they were in all things considered the very incarnation of hypocrisy. In spite of the oppressions under which they bowed they became, as our author says, so numerous that they encumbered the Church, and stuck as a disease within her bowels (p. 10). It is unnecessary to reproduce the taunts and abuses which are scattered up and down the literature of this period. The reader curious in such matters will find enough in the works of Taylor the Water-Poet, Bp Corbet's *Poems*, *The Puritan*, and elsewhere.

As to their numbers we may quote Taylor: "*Item*, he told that there were a great many Puritans in England, and that they did now so disturb the quietness of the Commonwealth that it was now almost turned topsy-turvy."—*The Liar*, 1641, p. 5.

*Brownism.* p. 4. Robert Brown, the founder of the Sect of Brownists, was born in 1549. He was educated at Cambridge, and, while a young man, obtained the mastership of the Free-School of St Olave's, Southwark, and became chaplain to the Duke of Norfolk. In 1571 he was cited to appear before Parker to answer for his opinions. The influence of Norfolk saved him for this time. Subsequently Brown abandoned the views of the Puritans for those of the Separatists. For preaching against bishops and church ceremonies he asserted that he was committed to thirty-two prisons. Soon after 1580 he found it prudent to go to Holland, but in 1584 he was stirring up strife in Scotland. He returned to the Church of England, but not much to his or her credit, as the remainder of his life seems to have been spent at Achurch, near Oundle (the living of which he accepted as the price of his conformity), in idleness, occasionally varied by beating his wife, not "as his wife, but as a curst old woman." For an almost contemporary account of him see Taylor's *Cluster of Coxcombes*, 1642.

*Anabaptists.* p. 9. (See Glossary.) The following is from Taylor's

account of *Anabaptists of these latter times* (pub. 1642): On the 29th April in the 32nd Henry VIII. one Mandeville and one Collins (both Anabaptists) were examined in St Margaret's Church at the Hill in Southwark, and there they were condemned and judged to be burnt as heretics, which was executed on them accordingly in the highway between Southwark and Newington.

In 1574 one man and ten women were judged to be burnt for being Anabaptists, but after much suit made, one woman recanted, and all the rest were banished. In the same year four carried faggots and did penance at Paul's Cross, and recanted, but two Dutchmen were burnt in Smithfield for being Anabaptists. "And in these our days the said Anabaptistical sect is exceeding rife, for they do swarm here and there without fear of either God or man, Law or order."—*A Cluster of Coxcombes* (1642), p. 4.

Howel "could be content to see an Anabaptist go to hell on a Brownist's back."—*Fam. Letters*, ed. 1678, p. 255a.

*The Family of Love*. p. 9. This sect, often called *Familists*, had its rise in Holland about the year 1550. Thirty years later the Familists appeared in England. They pretended to a more than ordinary sanctity. They asserted that none were of the number of the elect but such as were admitted into their family, and that all the rest were reprobate. They held that it was lawful for them to swear to an untruth before a magistrate or before any other person who was not of their society, for their own convenience. The originator of this sect was Henry Nicholas of Leyden, who made certain blasphemous pretensions that he partook of the Divinity of God. Their numerous books were ordered by Elizabeth to be burnt.<sup>1</sup>

The Familists are often referred to in language far from complimentary.

Those who care to know in what estimation they were held by the orthodox may refer to Taylor's *A Bawd, The Vertue of a Jayle, etc.*, and his *Apology for Private Preaching*.

In 1574, five Englishmen of the sweet sect called The Family of Love did penance at Paul's Cross, and there confessed and detested their wicked and damnable heresies.—*A Cluster of Coxcombes* (1642), p. 4.

*Amsterdam*. p. 11. No place seems to have been held in such vile repute as Amsterdam. Of course the gossiping Howel has something to say about it. Writing from Amsterdam, in 1617, he says: "The ground here, which is all for the most part twixt marsh and moorish, lies not only level but to the apparent sight of the eye far lower than the sea, which made the Duke of Alva say that the inhabitants of this country were the nearest to hell (the great Abyss) of any people on Earth. . . . One of the chiefest parts of his [the native's] Litany is From the Sea, the Spaniard, and the Devil, the Lord deliver me."—*Fam. Letters*, ed. 1678, p. 8.

Two years later he writes, "I am lodged in a Frenchman's house

<sup>1</sup> See Hook's *Ch. Dict.*

(at Amsterdam) who is one of the deacons of our English Brownists here; 'tis not far from the Synagogue of the Jews, who have free and open exercise of their religion here. I believe in this street where I lodge there be well near as many religions as there be houses; for one neighbour knows not, nor cares not much, what religion the other is of, so that the number of conventicles exceeds the number of churches here. . . . . The dog and rag Market is hard by, where every Sunday morning there is a kind of public mart for those commodities, notwithstanding their precise observance of the Sabbath."—*Ib.* p. 10.

"The pure reformed Amsterdammers,  
Those faithful Friday feasting capon crammers."

*Taylor, Works*, folio, 1630, f. 402 (Spenser Society's Rep.).

In his *Brood of Cormorants*, speaking of "A Separatist," he writes:

"If in lesser room they may be cramm'd,  
And live and die at *Amster* and be dam'd."—*Works*, f. 485.

"Let Amsterdam send forth her brats,  
Her fugitives and runagates;  
Let Bedlam, Newgate and the Clink  
Disgorge themselves into this sink."

A Poem on New England, *Incl. Misc.*, privately printed, 1870.

*Sleeping in Church.* p. 15.

"Men sleep in church, sure their brains are addle,  
Sly Satan lulls them, and doth rock the cradle:  
When men thus do no ill, 'tis understood,  
The devil hinders them from doing good."—*Taylor, Works*, f. 351.

See also *News from Hell, Hull, and Hullifax, etc.*, p. 46, and Howel's *Fam. Let.*, p. 255.

*Sabbath customs.* pp. 16, 19. See Crowley's Epigram of Alehouses (1550).

"**N**Edes must we haue places for vitayls to be solde,  
for such as be sycke, pore, feble, and olde.  
But, Lorde, to howe greate abuse they be growne!  
In eche lyttle hamlet, vyllage, and towne,  
They are become places of waste and excesse,  
And herbour for such men as lyue in idlenes.  
And lyghtly in the contrey they be placed so,  
That they stande in mens waye when they shoulde to church go.  
And then such as loue not to hear theyr fautes tolde,  
By the minister that readeth the newe Testament and olde,  
do turne into the alehouse, and let the church go;  
Yea, and men accompted wyse and honeste do so.  
But London (God be prayсед) all men maye commende,  
Whych doeth nowe this greate enormitie emende,  
For in seruice tyme no dore standeth vp,  
Where such men are wonte to fyll can and cuppe.

Wolde God in the countrey they woulde do the same,  
 Either for Gods feare, or for worldly shame!  
 How hallow they the Saboth, that do the tyme spende  
 In drynkinge and idlenes tyll the daye be at an ende?  
 Not so well as he doeth, that goeth to the plowe,  
 Or pitcheth vp the sheues from the carte to the mowe.  
 But he doeth make holye the Sabothe in dede,  
 That heareth Goddes worde, and helpeth suche as nede."

And *Newes out of Powles Churchyarde* (1577), Satyr 5:—

"Search Tauernes through, and typling bowres  
 eche Saboth day at morne:  
 And you shall thinke this geare to be  
 ene too too much forborne.

What else but gaine and Money gote  
 maintaines each Saboth day  
 The bayting of the Beare and Bull?  
 What brings this brutish play?  
 What is the cause that it is born,  
 and not controlled ought,  
 Although the same of custome be  
 on holy Saboth wrought?"

Stubs (*Anatomie of Abuses*, p. 157, ed. 1836) thus writes of Sunday labour:—

"If he were stoned for gathering a fewe stickes vppon the Sabbaoth daie, which in some cases might be lawful for necessities sake, and yet did it but once, what shal they be who all the Sabbaoth dayes of their life giue themselves to nothing els but to wallowe in all kinde of wickednesse and sinne, to the great contempt bothe of the Lord and his Sabbaoth? And though thei haue played the lazie lurdens all the weeke before, yet that daie, of set purpose, they will toyle and labour, in contempt of the Lord and his Sabaoth."

*The Mausolean Monument*. p. 22. See *Taylor, Works*, f. 553:—

"The Tomb of Mausoll, King of Carea,  
 Built by his Queen (kind Artemisia)  
 So wondrous made by art and workmanship,  
 That skill of man could never it outstrip:  
 'Twas long in building, and it doth appear  
 The charges of it full two millions were." (!)

*Fertile Kent*. p. 26.

"When as the pliant Muse, straight turning her about,  
 And coming to the land as Medway goeth out,  
 Saluting the dear soil, O famous Kent, quoth she,  
 What country hath this isle that can compare with thee!  
 Which hast within thy self as much as thou canst wish,  
 Thy conies, yenison, fruit, thy sorts of fowl and fish,

And what with strength comports, thy hay, thy corn, thy wood :  
Nor any thing doth want that any where is good."

Drayton's *Polyolbion*, 1613.

"Kent

Is termed the civilest place of all this isle ;  
Sweet is the country, because full of riches ;  
The people liberal, valiant, active, wealthy."

2 *K. Hen. VI.* iv. 7.

*Milk, a cosmetic.* p. 36.

"Some I have heard of that have been so fine  
To wash and bathe themselves in milk or wine,  
Or else with whites of eggs their faces garnish,  
Which makes them look like visors or new varnish."

*Taylor, Works*, f. 44.

*Avarice.* p. 41.

"The Earth is rip'd and bowel'd, rent and torn,  
For gold and silver which by man is worn :  
And sea and land are rak'd and search't and sought,  
For jewels too far fetcht, and too dear bought."—*Ib.* f. 43.

*Simony.* pp. 43, 45. On this subject see Hall's *Satires*, ii. 5 :—

"Saw'st thou ever si-quits patch'd on Paul's church door,  
To seek some vacant vicarage before ?  
Who wants a churchman, that can service say,  
Read fast and fair his monthly homily ?  
And wed and bury and make christen-souls ?  
Come to the left-side alley of Saint Pauls.  
Thou servile fool, why could'st thou not repair  
To buy a benefice at Steeple-fair ?  
There moghtest thou, for but a slender price,  
Adwoson thee with some fat benefice :

. . . . .  
A thousand patrons thither ready bring  
Their new-fall'n churches to the chaffering ;  
Stake three years' stipend ; no man asketh more :  
Go take possession of the church-porch door,  
And ring thy bells."

*Bribery—Lawyers.* pp. 42, 45—49.

"One here bewayles his wofull case  
and wisheth him vnborne,  
Another cryes with wringing handes,  
alas, I am forlorne.  
My sute thus long depended hath :  
The Lawe is on my syde,  
And yet in harde delays I lye  
true Iudgement to abyde.

Another thus be friended is,  
 The Iudge doth loue him well  
 And me (as poore and needie) they  
 doo dayly thus depell  
 Two hundreth myles and more I come :  
 My Wife at home (alas)  
 Lyes with my Children halfe forepynde :  
 (O lamentable case.)  
 My goods are spent, which labor brought,  
 through long and carefull toyle :  
 The Lawe hath lyckt vp all my wealth  
 for which I dyd turmoyle."

*Newes out of Powles*, Sat. 2.

The whole Satire might be quoted. Hall (ii. 3) satirizes lawyers thus :—

"The crouching client, with low-bended knee,  
 And many worships, and fair flattery,  
 Tells on his tale as smoothly as him list,  
 But still the lawyers eye squints on his fist ;  
 If that seem lined with a larger fee,  
 Doubt not the suit, the law is plain for thee."

*Well-drest fools*. p. 43. "It is a scurvy fashion of your devising that wise men in russet must reverence and stand bare to silken fools."  
 --*News from Hell, Hull, and Hallifax*, p. 51.

"Why, assure you, signior, rich apparel has strange virtues; it makes him that hath it without means, esteemed for an excellent wit: he that enjoys it with means, puts the world in remembrance of his means: it helps the deformities of nature, and gives lustre to her beauties."—*Every Man out of his Hu.* ii. 1.

"Here, in the court, be a man ne'er so vile,  
 In wit, in judgment, manners, or what else ;  
 If he can purchase but a silken cover,  
 He shall not only pass, but pass regarded :  
 Whereas, let him be poor, and meanly clad,  
 Though ne'er so richly parted, you shall have  
 A fellow that knows nothing but his beef,  
 Or how to rinse his clammy guts in beer  
 Will take him by the shoulders, or the throat  
 And kick him down the stairs. Such is the state  
 Of virtue in bad clothes! ha, ha, ha, ha!  
 That raiment should be in such high request."—*Id.* iii. 3.

*Fairies*. p. 53.

"Gert. Good Lord, that there are no fairies now-a-days, Syn.

Syn. Why, Madam?

Gert. To do miracles and bring ladies money."

1605. *Eastward Hoe*, v. i.



"Wash your pails and cleanse your dairies,  
Sluts are loathsome to the Fairies :  
Sweep your house, who doth not so  
Mab will pinch her by the toe."—Herrick's *Hesperides*.

"Grant that the sweet Fairies may nightly put money in your shoes,  
and sweep your house clean."—Holiday's *Marriages of the Arts*.

"Farewell rewards and Fairies,  
Good houswives now may say,  
For now foule sluttis in dairies  
Doe fare as well as they.  
And though they sweepe theyr hearths no less  
Then maydes were wont to doe,  
Yet who of late for cleanness,  
Finds sixe-pence in her shoe?"—Corbet's *Poems*, p. 213.

For more information on the subject of Fairies the reader is referred  
to Brand's *Pop. Antiq.*, edited by W. C. Hazlitt, 1870.

*Gluttony*. p. 55.

"This day, my Lorde his speciall friende  
must dyne with him (no naye)  
His Partners, Friendes and Aldermen :  
Wherefore he must puruaye  
Both Capon, Swan, and Hernshoe good,  
fat Bitture, Lareke and Quayle :  
Right Plouer, Snype, and Woodcock fine  
with Curlew, Wype and Rayle :  
Stonetinets, Teale, and Pecteales good,  
with Busterd fat and plum,  
Fat Pheasaunt Powt, and Plouer base  
for them that after come.  
Stent, Stockard, Stampine, Tãterucale,  
and Wigeon of the best :  
Puyt, Partrich, Blackebirde and  
fat Shoueler with the rest.  
Two Warrants eke he must provide  
To haue some Venson fat,  
And meanes héele make for red Déere too,  
(there is no nay to that.)  
And néedefully he must provide  
(although we speake not ont)  
Both Peacock, Crane, and Turkicock,  
and (as such men are wont)  
He must foresee that he ne lacke  
colde bakemeates in the ende ;  
With Custards, Tarts, and Florentines,  
the banquet to amende.

And (to be short and knit it vp)  
 he must not wanting sée  
 Straunge kindes of fysh at second course  
 to come in their degré.  
 As Porpesse, Seale and Salmond good,  
 with Sturgeon of the best  
 And Turbot, Lobster, with the lyke  
 to furnish out the feast.  
 All this theyle haue, and else much more,  
 sydes Marchpane and gréene chéesc,  
 Stewde wardens, Prunes, & sweete conserues  
 with spiced Wine like Léés :  
 Gréeneginger, Sucket, Suger Plate,  
 and Marmaladie fine :  
 Blauncht Almonds, Peares and Ginger bread.  
 But Peares should we assigne  
 And place before (as meete it is)  
 at great mens boordes : for why,  
 Raw fruites are first in seruice styll,  
 Else Scruiing men doo lye."

*Newes out of Powles, Sat. 4.*

To the above add the following :—" And nowadays if the table be not covered from the one end to the other, as thick as one dish can stand by another, with delicate meat of sundry sorts, one clean different from another, and to every dish a several sauce appropriate to his kind, it is thought there unworthy the name of a dinner. . . . And these many shall you have at the first course, as many at the second; and, peradventure, more at the third; besides other sweet condiments, and delicate confections of spiceries, and I cannot tell what. And to these dainties, all kinds of wines are not wanting, you may be sure."—*Anat. of Abuses*, p. 107.

*Drunkenness*. p. 57. Drunkenness "is a horrible vice and too too much used in Ailgna (Anglia); every county, city, town, village, and other places, hath abundance of ale-houses, taverns, and inns, which are so fraught with maltworms, night and day, that you would wonder to see them. You shall have them there sitting at the wine and good-ale all the day long, yea, all the night long too, peradventure a whole week together, so long as any money is left, swilling, gulling and carousing from one to another, till never a one can speak a ready word."—*Anat. of Abuses*, pp. 113, 114.

*King Harries Gold*. p. 61. The gold coins issued by Henry VIII. were sovereigns, half sovereigns, rose nobles, and George nobles, angels, crowns, and half-crowns. See Humphrey's *Coin Collector's Manual*, p. 451, ed. 1853.

*Tobacco*. pp. 70—72. Tobacco seems to have been a common road to ruin :

"Tobacco robs some men, if so it list, ·  
It steals their coin (as thieves do) in a mist."

*Taylor, Works*, f. 279.

"Too many there are that pass the bounds of liberality, and spend most prodigally . . . . on (the devil of India) Tobacco."—*Ib.* f. 336.

"Mischief or mischances seldom come alone: and it is a doubtfull question, whether the devil brought *Tobacco* into England in a *Couch*, or else brought a coach in a fog or mist of Tobacco."—*Ib.* f. 378.

*Every thing* that can possibly be said against Tobacco may be seen in *A Proclamation* (*Taylor*, ff. 251—253). It is too long for insertion here. The phrase *to drink* (inhale) tobacco was common. "He *drank* colt's-foot among his tobacco." *Taylor*, f. 358. Is this a practice now? I remember my father was in the habit of mixing colt's-foot with his tobacco thirty years ago. In Davies's *Epigrams* which appeared about 1598, one (xxxvi.) is in *praise* of tobacco.

*Pickt-hatch, the Spittle and Turnbull street.* p. 80.

"Old Bembus . . . . of Pickt-hatch,  
That plunging through the Sea of Turnebull Street,  
He safely did arrive at Smithfield Bars."—*Taylor, Works*, f. 164.

"Sometimes [she] is in the full at Pickt-hatch and sometimes in the wane at Bridewell."—*Ib.* f. 257.

"Turnbull street poor bawds."—*Ib.* f. 253.

"Did ever any man ere heare him talke  
But of Pick-hatch, or of some Shoreditch baulke?"

*Scourge of Villanie*, iii. 305.

The *Spittle*, St Bartholomew's.

*Dancing.* p. 85. Stubbs, in his *Anatomic of Abuses*, on 'The Horrible Vice of Pestiferous Dauncing used in Ailgna,' says: "Dauncing, as it is vsed (or rather abused) in these daies, is an introduction to whordome, a preparatiue to wantonnesse, a prouocatiue to vncleannesse, and an in-troite to all kinde of lewdnesse, rather then a pleasant exercise to the minde, or a wholesome practise for the bodie (as some list to calle it): . . . say they, it induceth loue: so say I also; but what loue? truely a lustfull loue, a venerous loue, a concupiscencious, bawdie, and beastiall loue, such as proceedeth from the stinking pump and lothsome sinck of carnall affection and fleshly appetite" (pp. 179, 182, ed. 1585, reprint of 1836).

*Bread made of Peas.* p. 99. "Do we not see the poor man that eateth brown bread (whereof some is made of rye, barley, peason, beans, oats, and such other gross grains) and drinketh small drink, yea, sometimes water, [and] feedeth upon milk, butter, and cheese."—*Anat. of Abuses*, p. 112.

"My house and I can feed on peas and barley."

*Every M. out of his Hu.* i. 1.

*Wapping.* p. 118. Pirates were commonly executed at Wapping.

"I haue seene many of these Prowling fisher-men end their liues like Swans (in a manner singing) and sometimes making their wills at Wapping, or looking through a hempen window at St. Thomas Waterings."  
—*Taylor, Works*, f. 87.

"By Wapping, where as hang'd drown'd Pirats dye."—*Ib.* f. 181.

"Thus much I mildly write in hope 'twill mend thee ;  
If not, the Thames or Wapping shore will end thee."—*Ib.* f. 316.

In Henry the VIII.'s time a place called "the Willows" was used for this purpose :—"And this yere was hongyd at the Wyllow by the Temse syde Woolfe and hys wyffe, for kyllynge of two Lumberttes in a bote on the Temse."—*Grey Friars Chron.* p. 37.

*Corbet's Song.* p. xv. I know not how this song came to be attributed to Corbet. It occurs in *Gammer Gurton's Needle*, Act ii., and may be found in Hawkins's *Origin of the English Drama*, vol. i. 1773 ; in Dodsley's *Old Plays*, vol. ii. 1825 ; and in Hazlitt's *Lectures on the English Drama*, p. 197, ed. 1840. The Comedy of *Gammer Gurton's Needle* has been attributed to John Still, who died Bishop of Bath and Wells in 1607 ; and to Nicholas Udal, who died in 1557. It is not likely that Corbet wrote the song, but I give it here notwithstanding.

Back and syde go bare, go bare,  
booth foote and hande go colde :  
But belley, God sende thee Good ale ynoughe,  
whether it be newe or olde.

I Can not eate, but lytle meat,  
my stomacke is not good ;  
But sure I thinke, that I can drynk  
with him that weares a hood.  
Though I go bare, take ye no care,  
I am nothinge a colde ;  
I stuffe my skyn so full within,  
of joly good ale and olde.  
Back and syde go bare, go bare,  
booth foote and hand go colde :  
But belly, God send the good ale inoughe,  
whether it be new or olde.

I love no rost, but a nut-brown toste,  
and a crab layde in the fyre,  
A lytle bread shall do me stead,  
much breade I not desyre.  
No froste nor snow, no winde, I trow,  
can hurte mee, if I wolde,  
I am so wrapt, and throwly lapt  
of joly good ale and olde.  
Back and side go bare, &c.

And Tyb my wyfe, that as her life  
loveth well good ale to seeke,  
Full ofte drinkes shee, tyll ye may see  
the teares run down her cheekes ;  
Then dooth she trowle to mee the bowle,  
even as a mault worne shuld ;  
And sayth, sweet hart, I tooke my part  
of this joly good ale and olde.  
Back and side go bare, &c.

Now let them drynke, tyll they nod and winke,  
even as good felowes shoulde do,  
They shall not mysse to have the blisse  
good ale doth brunge men to :  
And all poor soules that have scowred boules,  
or have them lustely trolde,  
God save the lyves of them and their wyves  
whether they be yonge or olde.  
Back and side go bare, &c.



# <sup>1</sup>Epigrammi Satiron.

---

Septem compacta cicutis  
Fistula.<sup>2</sup>

The Times Whistle ; or a newe Daunce<sup>3</sup>  
of seven Satires : whervnto are annexed  
divers other Poems comprising Things  
naturall, morall, & theologicall. Compiled  
by [R. C.] Gent.

---

Parturit, assiduo si non renovetur aratro,  
Non nisi cum spinis, gramina mundus ager.

---

## Ad Lectorem.

Reader, if thou expect to find in this booke either  
affectation of poetickall stile, or roughnesse of vnshewen  
invention, which amongst many is of moste estimation,  
being

[Remainder cut off.]

---

<sup>1</sup> leaf 1.

<sup>2</sup> Virg. Ecl. 2. 36.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. "The Letting of Hymovrs Blood in the Head-Vaine.  
With a new Morissee, daunced by seauen Satyres," etc.  
London, 1600.

[leaf 1, back]

## Epigrammisatiron.

I am sent from  
Nemesis to  
punish the sinsand expose the  
vices of this age,which is very  
corrupt, and  
needs severe  
remedies.

From *the* Rhannusian goddesse am I sent,  
 On sinne t' inflict deservèd punishment  
 All-seeing sunne, lend me thy searching eye,  
 That I may finde and scourge impietic, 4  
 And pull from vice, *which* hath beguiled sence,  
 Disguisd' like vertue, brasse faced' impudence.  
 For now this age, this worse then iron age,  
 This sincke of synne, this map of hell, this stage 8  
 Of all vncleannesse, whose disease is ease,  
 Wallowing in worlds of pleasure, swallowing seas  
 Of sensuall delightes, is whollie growne  
 A huge impostume of corruption, 12  
 Whose swelling tumor (well I am assur'de)  
 Must needs be launed', or ne'er will be recurde :  
 To the *which* act<sup>1</sup> my genius prompteth me,  
 Though it passe Æsculapian surgerye. 16  
 Be stout my heart, my hand be firm and steady,  
 Strike, and strike home, the vaine worlds veine is ready ;  
 Let vlcerd limbes and gowtie humours quake,  
 Whilst with my pen I doe incision make.<sup>2</sup> 20

[leaf 2]

## Ad Rithmum.

Fear not, my  
verse, the  
punishments  
which are pre-  
pared for truth,

or the spies

March forth, and boldly march, my tel troth rimes,  
 Disclose the lewdnesse of these looser times ;  
 Fear not the frowne of grim authority,  
 Or stab of truth-aborring villanie ; 24  
 Fear not the olde accustomed reward,  
 A loathsome prison still for truth preperde ;  
 Though many hundred (Argus hundred) eyes,  
 View, and review, each line, each word, as spies, 28

<sup>1</sup> *act* crossed out, and *act* written over.<sup>2</sup> A line is drawn here : the lower half of the leaf is cut off.

Your meaning to entrap<sup>1</sup> by wrong construction,  
 Vndaunted speake the truth ; let not detraction  
 Apall your courage ; spite of iniuries,  
 Tell to the world her base enormities.

which will mis-  
 construe your  
 meaning.

32

### A Ioue principium Musæ.<sup>2</sup>

When first I did intend to write 'gainst sinne,  
 My Muse was in suspence how to beginne ;  
 What crime to put i' th' forefront of my booke,  
 Not through defect (let me not be mistooke)  
 Of number, for the world abounds in vice,  
 But 'cause 'twas somewhat hard to breake the ice  
 To any ; but at last methought, 'twas fitt  
 First to inveigh 'gainst those that doe committ  
 The greatst offences ; whom I tooke to be  
 Our Ath[e]lists, which striue to roote vp the tree  
 Of true religion : by these reasons movd :—  
 First, that this sinne might be from vs remov'd ;  
 Without the which, it were in vaine to taxe  
 Other offences, of what note or sexe  
 Soever ; next, because this kinde of men  
 Doth most dishoner God ; and lastly, when  
 All that we are is his, from whom alone  
 We doe all good deriue, when every one  
 Moues by his power, lives by his permission,  
 And can doe nothing if the prohibition  
 Of the Almighty doe oppugne ; it lies  
 Only in him to end each enterprise.  
 These things concurring, I my selfe did fitt  
 To vse the inchoation of my witte  
 First in his cause, by whose direction  
 I hope to bring the rest vnto perfection.

36

40

44

48

52

56

At first I knew  
 not on what  
 subject to  
 commence,

but I thought I  
 would begin with  
 atheists who  
 commit the worst  
 offences,

God only can  
 bring my enter-  
 prise to per-  
 fection.

<sup>1</sup> rap not clear in MS.

<sup>2</sup> Virg. Ecl. 3. 60.



[leaf 2, back]

## Satira 1.

[AGAINST THE ATHEISTS, SABBATH-BREAKERS, ETC.]

## ARGUMENTUM.

Regnat in humanis diuina potentia rebus,  
 Non ex naturæ vi generatur homo.  
 Quid deus, et cui fini animal ratione creatum  
 Est pietas, est in religione scelus.

The atheist will  
 one day find a  
 God who can  
 punish sin.

Atheos ! forbear to speake such blasphemie !

“There is noe God,” O, damnd impiety !

Yes, wicked villaine, thou shalt one day finde,  
 With horror of a selfe-tormenting minde,

4

A God, though long it be ere he begin,  
 That can and will severely chastice sinne.  
 Thou execrable monster, hatchd in hell,

The atheist was  
 brought into the  
 world by the  
 devil.

Brought by a crew of devills heer to dwell

8

A plague one earth, why hast thou thus bewitcht  
 With thy contagion mindes that are enricht  
 With gifts of nature aboue common ranke ?

Who with *the* poyson *that* from thee they dranke 12  
 Envenom'd, wound themselues, and others harme  
 With strange opinions, *which* in heapes doe swarme

Schism, Puritan-  
 ism, Brownism,  
 and Papistry,  
 take their rise  
 from atheism.

From their ill-iudging thoughts ; for heresie,  
 Scisme, Puritanisme, Brownisme, pa[pi]strie, 16  
 And such like hydra-headed errors, all  
 Proceed from thee, thou art the principall ;

Thou *which* wilt never graunt a Diety,  
 Vnlesse it be in poynt of pollicie, 20 The atheist  
thinks religion  
was devised to  
frighten children,  
 Which by religion dost not set a strawe,  
 Devisde, thou thinkst, but to keep fooles in awe ;  
 Which makest a moncking-stock of hell and devill,  
 Not in contempt of them, that they are evill, 24  
 But 'cause thou vainly dost thyselfe perswade,  
 Such toyes as these, such bugbears, were first made  
 On purpose to fright children. Instantlie  
 The soule thou thinkst doth with the bodie dye. 28 and that the soul  
dies with the  
body.  
 Nature cannot immortalize a man,  
 'Tis true indeed, but heavenly powers can.  
 "That ther are no such things" (saist thou) "this age,  
 This vicious age, confirmes ; what need I wage 32  
 Other contentious arguments, when I  
 By this alone can proue noe Dietie ?  
 Were there a God, sinne would not flourish thus,  
 Neither would vertue (as it is) by vs 36 He says if there  
were a God sin  
would not  
flourish as it  
[leaf 3]  
does,  
 Be trodden vnder foote. For ought I see  
 The lewdest persons thriue best, and are free  
 From punnishment for sinne ; besides all this,  
 They that doe worship God doe often misse 40  
 The blessings of the world & suffer griefe ;  
 Yet ther is none can giue to them relief.  
 They often fall in danger & mischance,  
 Yet never finde a full deliverance. 44  
 Were there a God, sure then he would defend  
 His children still, *which* wholly doe depend  
 Vppon his mercy, & vpon them spread  
 His blessings in abundance : on the head 48  
 Of the vngodly, there alon should fall  
 His curses, crosses, punnishments ; but all  
 The righteous should escape." Peace, impious elfe !  
 All thou hast saide is clean against thy selfe. 52 But these things  
tell against the  
atheist,  
 High Ioue permits the sunne to cast his beames,  
 And the moyst cloudes to drop downe plenteous streames,

- Alike vpon the just & reprobate,  
 Yet are not both subjected by one fate? 56
- while in eternity  
 they will be a  
 cause of honour  
 to the good.
- The sunnes kinde heat, heavens fruitfull distillation,  
 Shall be a cause of greater condemnation  
 To the vngodlie; but vnto *the* just,  
 (As gracious blessings *which* he doth entrust 60  
 Vnto his children) they well vsd' shall be  
 A cause of honour in eternity.
- The wicked may  
 flourish now,  
 but they will go  
 to hell in the end.
- Well may the wicked flourish in this world,  
 But there will come a time they shall be hurld 64  
 From top of all their pleasures eminence,  
 And hell shalbe their place of residence.  
 Then shall the righteous shine like glorious starres
- The righteous  
 will shine as the  
 stars and enjoy  
 perpetual rest  
 in heaven.
- Within the sphear of heaven; oppressions, warres, 68  
 Afflictions, persecutions, iniuries,  
 Hatred, contempt, & all calamities  
 Shall be a crowne of honour to invest  
 Their then triumpphant browes; eternall rest, 72  
 Perpetuall joy, subject to no mischance,  
 Shalbe their portion & inheritance.
- But against him that makes negation  
 Of principles in art, no disputation 76  
 Is to be held: deny God, & his Word  
 Can smale impression make; it is the sword
- [leaf 3, back]
- Of iustice *which* must bring thee to confesse  
 The powerfull Godhead; yet I'le somewhat presse 80  
 Thy irreligeous minde. Of thy creation  
 Take but a true consideration;  
 For 'tis not Nature, as thou dost surmise,  
 That begets man in soule & qualities. 84  
 For thou must know, two parts must first conioyne
- Two parts con-  
 join to make a  
 perfect man—  
 soul and body.
- Before we can a perfect man define;  
 The soule, an essence intellectuall,  
 The body, a substance corporeall; 88  
 The first we immediatly receiue  
 From Ioue; the other God to man doth leaue

(As a subordinat instrument)

To generat ; 'tis onlie incident

92

To man, to cause the bodies procreation ;

The soule's infusde by heavenly operation.

Looke on this with an intellectuall eye,

And it will teach thee ther 's a Diety.

96

Look at the earth  
which, each year  
renewing its  
beauty, shows a  
supreme Power.View but the earth, *which* doth each year renew

Her drouping beauty, &amp; clean change her hiew

Vpon the Springs approach ; doth it not shew

A supream Power, that governs things belowe ? 100

Looke on the heavens (*which* thou shalt ne're ascend,

Vnlesse it be with horrowr to attend

This sentence of damnation ;) looke, I say,

Doth not their goodly opifice display

104

Look to the  
heavens, and-  
they declare a  
Being who is  
above nature.

A power 'bove Nature ? Dull conceited foole,

Ne'er trained vp but in dame Natures schoole,

Looke in thy selfe, when thou commitst a sinne,

Doth not thy conscience prick thy soule within ? 108

Look on yourself;  
if there is no God  
why does con-  
science make  
you fear ?

If that ther be no God, what dost thou fear ?

Why doth remorse of conscience, or dispaire,

Afflict thee thus ? This is enough to prove

(Were there no more) an Elohim, a Iove.

112

This is enough to  
prove there is a  
God.

How canst thou then thus impiously deny

The sacred essence of the Diety ?

Recant this error, least, to all mens wonder,

Revengefull Iove doe strike thee dead with thunder.

Being once granted (this our true position) 117

Ther is a God ; let 's now make inquisition

What this God is ; *which* must be by relation

Vnto his workes, or else by meer negation

120

Of what he is not, we may make collection

Of what he is. It is the times infection

[To b]<sup>1</sup>e to curious in the mistery

Of searching his essentialitie,

124

It is the fashion  
now to be over  
curious in  
searching into  
[leaf 4]  
the Divine Being.

Which simplie, as too glorious for the eye

<sup>1</sup> MS. worn off.

	Of mortall vnderstanding to descric, We cannot comprehend ; let 's therfore know him In that sort onlie that the Scriptures shew him. 128
God is an intellectual Essence, omnipotent, omniscient, and always true.	God is an Essence intellectuall, A perfect Substance incorporeall ; A Spirit whose being ne're begining knew, Omnipotent, omniscient, ever true ; 132 Or rather, in the abstract :—Majestie, Truth, mercy, wisdom, power, iustice, glorie ; Which out of nothing this great world did frame, And into nothing will rechange the same ; 136 Which made that glorious eye of heaven, <i>the</i> sunne To rule the day, and for darke night <i>the</i> moone ; Which joynes in friendly league each element, And keeps the sea within his continent ; 140 Which of the dust mans body did create, Into the <i>which</i> a soule he did translate, Like his owne image pure ; vntill mans fall, Left to his owne free-will, polluted all 144 That goodly microcosme ; for the <i>which</i> deed, Had not the issue of the promise seed, The valiant Lion of stout Iudahs tribe, The gentle Lambe vngentlie crucified, 148 Redeemd his life, borne his iniquity, And conquerd Satan & his tyrannie, He should haue been severely punished And everlastingly haue perished. 152
He created man out of the dust and left him to his own free will.	But now by him, all that make oblation Of a true faith, assure their soules salvation ; What the first Adam did by sinne destroy, The Second hath restorde with duple ioye. 156 But leaving this moste heavenly meditation, Let 's shew for what effect was mans creation : It was, it is, to serve this God alone, With honour, loue, & true devotion. 160 The manner how were somewhat long to write,
Christ redeemed man from everlasting punishment, and restored what Adam lost.	
Man was created to serve, honour, and love his Maker.	

- The Scripture all his precepts doth recite.  
 Which, cause we cannot in all parts fulfill,  
 In lieu of power he doth except our will. 164  
 But man, vngratefull man, this God withstandes,  
 And, like Briareus with his hundred handes,  
 Strives, as it were, to pull him from his throne  
 Which gave him being, & through whom alone 168  
 He his well-being has. O, impious deed,  
 Which to recount my very heart doth bleed !  
 That wee (like to those giants, which made warre  
 Against the heavens) with such presumption dare 172  
 Lift vp our selues against our Maker by  
 So many kinde<sup>1</sup> of damnd impietie,  
 So many hellish sinnes, whose hideous cry  
 Percing the clowdes, mounting aboue the skie, 176  
 Affront Gods power, & doe deserve to finde  
 Another Deluge to destroy mankinde.  
 But God, this gracious God, with mercie strives  
 To bring vs to him & to saue our liues ; 180  
 And therefore hath chalkd out a ready way,  
 (That we no more might goe so farre astray)  
 His Gospell ; which path (if not trod amisse)  
 Will safelie bring vs to celestially blisse. 184  
 This profferd grace some see not, some despise,  
 Although herein alone their safetie lies.  
 Omitting Iewish superstition  
 With soule-profaning Turkish Alcheron, 188  
 And Infidels, which noe religion vse,  
 Whose ignorance cannot their sinne excuse :  
 We that doe boast of Christianity,  
 And knowledge in Gods holie misterie, 192  
 With sects & scismes our religion  
 Have made a chaos of confusion.  
 Our Anabaptists I will set aside,  
 With Families of Love, whose aimes are wide 196

Man strives  
 against God and  
 tries to pull Him  
 from His throne.  
 [leaf 4, back]

Like the fabled  
 giants, we lift up  
 ourselves against  
 our Maker.

By our sins we  
 affront Him and  
 deserve a second  
 deluge to destroy  
 us.

He sent the  
 Gospel to guide  
 us to bliss,  
 but while some  
 see it not  
 others despise it.

We who boast of  
 our Christianity  
 have made a  
 chaos of our  
 religion by our  
 sects.

<sup>1</sup> MS. tinde

From the true faith. There is a triuall kinde  
Of seeming good religion, yet I finde  
But one to be embrac'd, *which* must be drawne  
From Papist, Protestant, or Puritane. 200

I will speak first  
of the Puritans  
who have become  
very numerous,

And first to speake of that pure seeming sect,  
*Which* now of late beginneth to infect  
The body of our land :—This kinde of men  
Is strangelier (for I know not how nor when) 204

and cumber the  
Church, sticking  
as a disease  
within her  
bowels.

Become so populous, that *with* the number,  
But more with new devises, it doth cumber  
Our Catholique Church, & sticks as a disease  
Within her bowels ; whilst it seems to please 208  
With fained habite of true holinesse  
*Which* is indeed the worst of wickednesse.

[leaf 5]

The thought of this hath set my Muse one fire,  
And I must rage e're I can swage mine ire. 212

You hypocriticall precisians,  
By vulgar phrase entitled Puritanes,

Of their apparent  
sanctity they  
make a cloak to  
hide their  
villany.

*Which* make of superficial sanctitie  
A cloke, to hide your inbred villanie ; 216

You soules-seducers vnto worst of evils,  
You seeming saints & yet incarnat devils,  
How dare ye slander our religion,  
And make a scoffe at our devotion ? 220

They revile the  
sacred orders of  
the Church ;

How dare you with opprobrious wordes revile,  
Or with vnhalloved actions thus defile  
The sacred orders *which* our Church doth hold,  
And sanctimonious customes, *which* of olde 224

Hane by grave counsels, to a godlie end,  
Not superstition, as you doe pretend,  
Been instituted ? Cease your open wrongs !

even the bishops  
cannot escape  
their slanderous  
tongues.

Cannot our Bishops scape your slanderous tongues ?  
No : you maligne their great authoritie, 229  
Because they doe search out your villanie.

You must haue private meetings ! To what end ?  
In bellie-cheer and lust your time to spend. 232

O rare devotion & strange holinesse,  
*Which* endes in soule polluting beastlinesse !  
 Well may you blinde the eyes of common sence,  
 And passe for men of zeale & confidence  
 'Mongst simple worldlings, *which* by outward shew  
 Doth iudge the inward man ; but God doth know  
 All *your* intents, & with severity  
 Will castigate your damnd hypocrisie.

236 They pass for  
 men of zeal  
 amongst the  
 simple, but God  
 knows all, and  
 He will punish  
 their hypocrisy.

In the mean time may you be forced to dwell  
 At Amsterdam, or else sent quicke to hell.

240

Till then may  
 they go to  
 Amsterdam,  
 or hell.

For now my Muse doth hear another motion ;—

"Ignorance is the mother of devotion !"

244

Ignorance is not  
 the mother of  
 devotion, as the  
 papists say,

Erroneous papist, hast soe litle grace ?

Thou knowst 'tis false, then how, or with what face

Canst thou maintaine against thy conscience

So manifest an error without sence ?

248

For how can he be good that knowes no cause

Whie he is good, but like a milhorse drawes,

Blindfolded, in a circle ? Yet you teach

(For to the learnèd I addresse my speech)

Religion in an vnknowne tongue to those

Whom we call common people ; I suppose,

Nay trulie may averre, you doe conceale

Your misteries, not daring them reveale,

Lest that the people, knowing them for lies,

Should contemne you & hate your heresies :

You that are worse then cannibals by oddes,

For they devoure but men, you eat the gods !

From whom doe you assume authoritie

To pardon capitall iniquity ?

Why, not from God, the Pope's sufficient

To pardon sinne & divert punishment.

264

Who taught you soe, you wilfully blinde fooles ?

Sure Satan read this lecture in his schooles.

Wher did you learne ? (was 't in the Devils booke ?

For from Gods word I 'me sure you never tooke

268

Where did they  
 learn that it is  
 lawful to murder  
 princes ?

252 who teach  
 religion in an  
 unknown tongue,  
 not daring to  
 reveal their  
 mysteries.

256

[leaf 5, back]

260 They are worse  
 than cannibals,  
 who only eat  
 men, while the  
 papists eat the  
 gods.



	Such damnable positions) that to murder A prince, <i>which</i> doth not <i>your</i> religion furdre, Is a moste lawfull act, yea commendable, For <i>which</i> you will at any time enable	272
The man who attempts the murder of a prince	That man with <i>your</i> best benediction, And all his sinnes free absolution, And warrantize him heaven & happie day : ("A warrant seald with butter!" as we say).	276
	All this, & more then this, you will performe, Be 't to the meanest abject, basest worme, That dares attempt soe horrible a deed. And though his enterprise doe not succeed,	280
	(As God forbid it should) but he doe die For his lewd treason, he shall instantlie Be canonizd a Saint. Ravilliacke	
is canonized, as was Ravallac for the murder of Henry IV. of France, May 14, 1610,	Doth neither <i>Saints</i> nor Martires title lacke. But you had reason : his vnhappy hand Destroyde a kinge, <sup>1</sup> & almost brought a land To vtter ruin ; for being thus defilde With her owne princes blood, a tender childe	284
	Was to succeed, & we know Scriptures say, "Woe to those landes whose scepters children sway." But Faux & his confederats <sup>2</sup> are enrolde	
and Fawkes for his attempt on our King and Parliament in 1605.	For blessed <i>Saints</i> among you.—Who will holde <i>Your</i> piety authentically, <i>which</i> makes Such hell-houndes <i>Saints</i> ? What godly heart not quakes To hear such mischiefe, to record such evill, As they would haue committed? The grand Devill	292
The devil only could have put such a plot into a man's head.	Was their instructor sure, else could they not Haue once devisde soe damnable a plott, As by one blast <i>our</i> king to ruinat, And our whole kingdome to depopulate,	297 300

<sup>1</sup> MS. kinde.<sup>2</sup> Garnet and Oldcorn are set down as "martyrs" in an "Apologia" published at Cologne in 1610, written by A. E. Ioannes Cydonius, who justifies the killing of heretic kings. Others at that time did the same.

And spoile of her best treasure. But high Iove,  
 Against whose power in vaine their forces strove,  
 Crost their designs, & with a mighty arme  
 Delivered vs from the pernicious harme  
 Of that moste eminent danger; to whose Name  
 All praise & all thanksgiving for the same  
 We doe ascribe; beseeching him to blesse  
 Our realme from you & your accomplices.  
 But to proceed: no man may kill his prince  
 Although a tyrant; which I could evince  
 By arguments drawne from the word of God,  
 But I too long one this haue made abode.  
 Besides your errorr I see plaine repute,  
 As needs noe disputation to confute,  
 There are more errorrs of especiall note,  
 Which, if I list recite, I heer could cote;  
 But I doe leave them for the learned pen  
 Of great divines and more iudicious men.  
 Your holy water, purgatorie, bulles,  
 Wherwith you make the common people gullies,  
 Are grosse abuses of phantastique braines  
 Subtillie devis'de only for private gaines,  
 Which you pull from the simple as you list,  
 Keeping them blinded in black errorrs mist;  
 And from the truth doe lead them clean astray,  
 Whilst of their substance you doe make your prey.  
 You false impostors of blinde ignorance,  
 Think you to 'scape eternall vengeance?  
 'Tis not your Popes fond dispensation,  
 Your workes of supererrogation,  
 Your idle crossings, or your wearing haire  
 Next to your skin, or all your whipping-cheer,  
 Your praiers & pilgrimage to *Saints*, your pixes,  
 Your holy reliques, beads, & crucifixes,  
 Your masses, Ave Maries, images,  
 Dirges, & such like idle fantasies

[leaf 6]

304 But God delivered  
 us from the  
 danger,  
 for which we give  
 Him thanks.

308

No man may kill  
 his king, as might  
 be proved from  
 the Bible.

312

316 Besides this  
 error, the Church  
 of Rome has  
 many others:—

320 Holy water,  
 Purgatory, and  
 bulles,

which are  
 devised for  
 private gain.

324

328

The Pope's dis-  
 pensation, works  
 of supererogation,  
 wearing of hair,

332

whippings,

pilgrimages,  
 pixes,  
 relics, beads,

masses, images,

336

and such idle  
 fancies.

Of superstitiously polluted Rome,.

cannot save men's  
souls.

Between the  
schismatic and  
the Romanist is  
the Church of  
England.

But its zeal is  
cold, choked with  
thorns, and  
polluted.

[leaf 6, back]  
Yet the gospel  
displays its light  
over all our  
land.

The proud, the  
greedy, and the  
sensual hate the  
gospel.

Many say they  
can pray at home  
when they want  
to pray.

Some hold our  
Church to be too  
papistical.

Can saue *your* soules in that great day of doome.

Between these sects, as in a golden meane,

Stands the religion whervnto we leane ;

Vndoubted truth it is that we doe holde,

Yet is our zeale so frozen & so colde,

So chockt with thornes of covetous desire,

So hoggishlie polluted with the mire

Of carnall lusts, that our best sanctity

Is but a kinde of bastard piety.

And yet the times as now did ne're afford

Such plenty of dispencers of Gods word ;

For now the Gospell, like the midday sunne,

Displaies his beames over all Albion.

But we, as if by too much light strucke blinde,

Neglect this meanes of grace, *which* is assignd

For our soules health. Some out of pride contemne it,

Others, bent vnto greedy gaine, condemne it,

Because it speakes against the slavish vice

Of soule-bewitching, sordid avarice.

Others, that follow Epicureus fashion,

Cannot abide to hear of reformation,

And therefore hate the Gospell, *which* doth cry

Against their brutish sensuality.

Many there are *which* live like libertines,

And the holy C[h]urch & good devines

Doe hold ridiculous ;—their homely homes

Will serve them well enough to pray, when 't comes

Into their fancies ; they cannot abide

Vnto Church orders strictlie to be tide.

Others, forsooth, will haue a congregation,

But that must be after another fashion

Then our Church doth allow,—no church at all,—

For that they say is too papisticall ;

Like<sup>1</sup> their profession, they themselves will sever

<sup>1</sup> MS. Likes.

340

344

348

352

356

360

365

368

From stone walles;—tut, their church shall last for ever;  
 Theire soules shalbe their tabernacles still, 373  
 That kinde of church doth only please their will.

Iove separat me from these Separists, Jove, deliver me  
 Which think they hold heavens kingdome in their fists, from such men!  
 And yet their life, if we into it prie, 377  
 Is full of sinne & damnd impiety.

Some, more for fear of the lawes punnishment  
 Then zeale vnto devotion, doe frequent 380  
 Gods holy temple, where they doe employ  
 Themselves as ill as if they staide away;  
 On[e] part in sleeping, in discourse another;

A third doth seeme to marke, but doth discover 384  
 Sillie some object that withdrawes his eye  
 From what he should attend; the younger frie  
 Come only to be seen & see: of all  
 Which doe repaire to church, the fruit is smale 388  
 That is collected by them. I surmise  
 That wickednesse by this doth rather rise  
 To greater height, then anywise decaie;

For pride & lust it is the ready way 392  
 I'me sure. Of every new framd fashion,  
 This is the place to make moste ostentation,  
 To shew the bravery of our gay attire  
 Hether to come on purpose; our desire 396  
 Is to be seen of all, whilst we observe

The like in others. Though our soules doe sterue  
 For want of knowledge, we doe litle care;

From gazing vp and downe we cannot spare 400  
 A iot of time to hearken to Gods word,  
 When all's to litle that we doe afforde  
 To our owne fancies; thus the time we spend,  
 Which devine service soone brings to an end; 404  
 And then againe we homeward doe advaunce,  
 Fuller of pride, as full of ignorance.

Is there a wench whose beauty is of note? If there's a  
 pretty wench,

Jove, deliver me  
from such men!

Some go to  
church because  
they fear the  
law.

Some sleep,  
some talk;

others come to  
see and be seen.

Every new  
fashion is dis-  
played at church.

[leaf 7]

Not a moment  
can be spared  
from gazing  
about.

- the gallants come  
to observe her  
perfections. Hether your gallants come, only to cote 408  
Her rare perfections ; yea, this sacred place  
Serves them to make (they have soe litle grace)  
Compacts for lust. Thus by these hellish evils  
The howse of God is made a den of devils. 412
- I do not wish to  
hinder people  
from going to  
church ; I speake not this to hinder the concourse  
Of well affected mindes vnto that source,  
That fountaine, blessed fountaine, *which* doth flow  
With living waters, Gods word ; no, my bow 416
- I only want to  
rectify abuses. Aimes at another marke ; I onlie strive  
To rectifie abuses *which* deprive  
The Gospell of his propagation,  
And plentifull encrease. Our nation 420  
Rather needs spurres to quicken his slow pace  
Vnto religion & the house of grace.
- Some are so  
greedy of gain  
that even the  
Sabbath cannot  
hinder them  
from following  
their occupations. For some there are *which* gape soe after gaine,  
That on the Lords day they will not refraine, 424  
So 't to their benefit tend, to exorcise  
Themselves in some laborious enterprise.  
In towne & cuntrie this vngodlie sinne  
To grow vnto a custome doth beginne ; 428
- The country  
man does so,  
and so does the  
tradesman. Your country swaines will moste familiarlie  
Worke one this day & labour impiouslie.  
But 'mongst our tradesmen specially, this vse,  
Which I may iustlie call a damnd abuse, 432  
Is most familiar. Six dayes in the weeke  
Are not sufficient, but the seventh must reeke  
With sweat of their vngodly labour, when  
They should repaire to church with other men, 436
- They labour when  
they ought to be  
at church. To give vnto the Lord, the only Giver  
Of blessings, & the gracious Forgiver  
Of hell deserving sinnes, all praiers & praise.  
What though the word of God expresly sayes, 440  
"This is the day *which* thou must dedicate  
Vnto my service, this day at no rate  
Shalt thou performe thy worke, least thou doe draw

- My heavy wrath vpon thee?" Though the law 444 They despise the  
 Of man forbid the same, and doe inflict laws of God and  
 A punishment on those it doth convict [leaf 7, back]  
 Of this offence; yet fearlesse of all danger, man which  
 From the man borne i' th' land vnto the stranger, 448 forbid this sin.
- If they can cast a mist before the eye  
 Of sinne-correcting, strict authority,  
 Moste of our tradesmen will enact this crime ;  
 It stands not with their profit to loose time ; 452 Most of our  
 They'l take their best advantage while they may ; tradesmen are  
 It is sufficient once a month to pray. guilty of it,  
 Vngraciqu villaines, how can you expect thinking once a  
 A blessing to your labour, which neglect 456 month often  
 The only meanes, Gods service, which alone enough to pray.
- The manna gathered in the wilderness  
 By the Iewes vnbelieving wickednesse 460 The manna  
 Vpon their Sabbath, by the Lord forbidden, collected on the  
 Both putrifie & stuncke. Nothing is hidden Jewish sabbath  
 Which shall not be reveal'd ; though you may blinde putrified.
- The eyes of man, there is a God will finde 464  
 And punish this lewd sinne. I' th' meantime think  
 That all such labours in his nostrils stinke,  
 And therefore shall prove fruitlesse : men intend  
 But God it is that consummates the end. 468 All Sunday  
 labour is in vaine.
- I cannot 'scape the blest Communion,  
 Which doth with God effect our vnion,  
 It is soe much abusd by sinfull man,—  
 To passe the papist & the Lutheran, 472 The Holy Com-  
 Their trans & consubstantiation, munion is much  
 Of both these errors to make no relation,— abused.
- We that doe holde the verity indeed,  
 That this same bred, wheron our soules doe feed, 476  
 This wine we drink, is reall bred and wine,  
 Although the mistery be moste devine ;  
 Even we, I say, though we doe represent  
 Passing by the  
 Papist and the  
 Lutheran, we

ourselves err in our opinion of this Sacrament.	The true opinion of the Sacrament.	480
	Yet in the vse doe erre, nay rather sinne, Which applide rightly is the meanes to winne Eternall life. Some men, <i>which</i> are vnable	
Some go to the Holy Table to please their sense ;	To iudge the worth, come to this Holy Table	484
	Only to please their sence ; others there are <i>Which</i> for so smale a pittaunce doe not care ;— “What is a bitte of bread, a sip of wine?”—	
	But that the law doth straightly them enioyne,	488
	To be partakers of this holy meat	
some think it is not worth the trouble, but go because the law compels them.	And sacred drink. By farre they'd rather eat At their owne howses, wher their carnall sence May be suffic'd ; their soules intelligence	492
[leaf 8]	May sterve for want of this spirituall food, And they regard it not. That's only good In their grosse braines, whose visibility And appetituall sensibility	496
Others esteem themselves un- worthy, and refuse to go on that account,	Lies open to their sence. Others ther be, <i>Which</i> doe indeed esteem more reverendlie Of the Lords Supper ; & because they knowe The danger great, that to their soules may grow	500
	By their vnworthy eating, quite refuse To be partakers of it ; still they vse Some let or other to detaine them back ; .	
	Either they doe due preparation lacke,	504
or because they are not in charity with all men.	Or else they are not in true charity With other men. Ther must noe malice be In a communicant : 'tis true.—What then ? Doe you surmise, O shallow-pated men,	508
	That this excuse is all sufficient To satisfie for such a foule intent ?	
But remember, the king made his feast, and that you were bidden.	No, simple worldlings ; the king made his feast, And you were bidden to it 'mongst the rest ;	512
	But 'cause you would not come, you shall not tast His sacred supper, but you shalbe cast Into that pitt, with the ungodlie rout,	

Where the worme dies not, the fire ne're goes out. 516

And soe shall likewise he that boldlie came

Without his wedding roabe; I mean the same

Which comes vnto the Table of the Lord

As to some common, ordinarie bord,

520

And never seekes to make true preparation,

But even eats & drinckes his owne damnation.

It is a lamentable thing to see

The ignorance & strange stupidity

524

Of men now living in the clearest light

Of the resplendant Gospell, as if night

Of darkest error still eclips'd their eyes;

They are so rude in the true misteries

528

Of their salvation, scarce one man 'mong ten

Can giue a true account of 's faith; nor, when

He comes to due examination,

How he hath made his preparation

532

For the Lords Table, iustlie tell the number

Of Sacraments; this only thing doth cumber

The wits of many & confounds their sence,

As I haue seen by plaine experience.

536

How far then are they from the perfect knowing

Of their true vse! yet these men will be shewing

Themselves moste forward to receive; but what

They know not, nor they care not much for that; 540

But for the world, to purchase earthly gaine,

They follow that with dayly sweat and paine.

or their true use.

[leaf 8, back]

It is a custome, lewd enough I 'me sure,

(And I doe wonder that our lawes endure

Such profane vses) after the reccate

Of that coelestiall sacramentall meat,

For olde & young i' th' country frequently

Vpon that day to vse most luxurie.

Each on[e] must then vnto an alehouse run,

Drink drunk, act any sinne vnder the sunne.

Why? this same day 's a day of iubile;

It is lamentable  
to see the ignor-  
ance and  
stupidity of men

in that which  
concerns their  
own salvation.

Some cannot  
even tell the  
number of the  
Sacraments,

After receiving  
the Holy Sacra-  
ment,

it is common for  
old and young to  
go to the alehouse.



It has been the  
custom; and  
they would  
rather lose their  
soules than their  
privileges.

Such men are  
like him who  
swept his house,  
after which seven  
evil spirits came  
to dwell with  
him.

Satan stands  
ready to enter  
into them as he  
did into Judas.

So man, whose  
life is but a  
bubble, is blown  
from Christi-  
anity.

If the joys of  
heaven have not  
softened his heart,

let the fear of  
hell do so.

It hath been an accustomed liberty 552  
To spend this day in mirth, and th[e]y will choose  
Rather their soules then priviledges loose.  
And soe (I fear) not few among them will;  
For they, which on this day doe drink & swill 556  
In such lewd fashion, may be likened well  
To him that swept the howse wher he did dwell,  
And made it clean, & garnisht it full faire;  
After which act ther did to him repaire 560  
Seven evill fiends worse then the former were;  
More ougly sinnes did enter & dwell there,  
And by his falling to more wicked sinning,  
He made his end far worse then his begining. 564  
So is 't with them that in this sort doe sinne,  
Satan stands close ready to enter in,  
Even as he did in Iudas, which had eat  
Vnworthily the sacramentall meat. 568  
And yet fond man regardeth not one whit,  
Till he have made himselfe the devils bit,  
Who at two bits, for so his name imports,  
Devours both soule & body, mans two parts. 572  
Thus is man blowne, by every puffle of vanity,  
From the true scope of Christianity,  
His soules salvation. Wretched, wicked man,  
Returne, repent! Thy life is but a spanne, 576  
A breath, a buble; think that thou must die  
To live in joyes or endlesse miserie.  
And if the comfort of celestiaall blisse,  
Whose joy beyond imagination is, 580  
Haue not sufficient power to mollifie  
Thy heart, heart hardned in iniquity,  
Yet let the horror of damnation,  
Of whose strange paines no tongue can make relation,  
Enforce repentance with a true contrition, 585  
And that produce a forward disposition

To a new course of life ; refuse not grace  
While it is offered ; while ther's time & space  
Dally not with repentance, least iust Love  
Convert to furie his condemnèd love ;  
And in that ire, iustly conceivèd ire,  
Confine thy soule to hells tormenting fire.

588 While he has time  
let him not dally  
[leaf 9]  
with repentance!

592

## Satira 2.

[AGAINST SHAMS.]

## ARGUMENTUM.

Fronti nulla fides, ludunt spectacula mentem ;  
 Non facies verum symptoma cordis habet.  
 Decipimur specie recti, sub imagine veri  
 Falsa latent; virtus dissimulata placet.

No poet has been  
 able to describe  
 the Mausoleum,

The brave erect Mausolian monument,  
 That famous vrne, the worlds seventh wonderment,  
 Whose sumptuous cost & curious workemanship  
 Noe poet, though in Helicon he dip 596  
 His pen, by verse is able to dilate,  
 Being made for wonder, not to imitate ;

which, for all its  
 outward beauty,  
 is full of  
 corruption.

For all his glorious outside, without staine,  
 Filth<sup>1</sup> & corruption doth within containe. 600  
 The sunne, whose spacious orbe in magnitude  
 Doth far exceed the earth, seemes to the rude,  
 Ignorant of the astronomicke art,

The sun looks no  
 bigger than a  
 cart-wheel.

Noe bigger then the wheel of Hobnols cart. 604  
 Counterfet gold, if we doe trust our eye,  
 Will passe for purest mettall currantlie.

The crocodile  
 sheds tears before  
 he devours his  
 prey.

The dredfull beast, ycleped crocodile,  
 Whose dwelling is about Ægyptian Nile, 608  
 Before he doth devoure his wished prey,  
 Pitty in outward semblance doth display ;

<sup>1</sup> MS. Fill.

For brinish teares from his false eyes distill,  
 When he is ready to destroy & kill. 612  
 Full dear seafaring passengers abie  
 The Syrens sweet enchaunting melodie,  
 Which by their singing evermore presage  
 Death thretning danger by the furious rage 616  
 Of an ensuing storme. Of Circes cup  
 Who hath not heard, that who therof did sup  
 Was changd (strange metamorphosis in nature)  
 From humane forme into a brutish creature? 620  
 And yet the cup [w]as goodly to beholde,  
 Richly enchasde with pearle, composde of golde.  
 Glorious in view appeard Medusaes head,  
 Nathlesse it did strike the beholders dead. 624  
 Serpents & poysnous toads, as in their bowers,  
 Doe closely lurke vnder the sweetest flowers.  
 But sencelesse things & sensuall beastes alone  
 Mislead not mans to rash opinion; 628  
 Even rationall creatures doe our iudgements cheat,  
 Man is to man a subject of deceite;  
 And that olde saying is vntrue, "the face  
 Is index of the heart." False looking glasse 632  
 To view the thoughts of man, when there doe raine  
 Stormes of displeasure in mans vexèd braine;  
 When mists of sorrow reasons eyes doe blinde,  
 When revenge thunders in his ragefull minde, 636  
 His face can carry sunneshine of delight,  
 Although his soule be blacke as ougly night.  
 You erre, fond physiognomers, that hold  
 The inward minde followes the outward molde. 640  
 Philosophers, your axiome is vnure,  
 The soule is as the bodies temperature;  
 Complexion noe certaine ground doth shew  
 The disposition of a man to know; 644  
 Els why should Nisus, that same<sup>1</sup> pretty youth,

The Syrens by  
 their melody  
 entice sailors to  
 their destruction.

Circe's cup,  
 though beautiful,  
 changed him who  
 drank from it into  
 a brute.

Serpents and  
 toads lurk under  
 sweet flowers.

[leaf 9, back]

Man is to man a  
 subject of deceit;

his face is not  
 the index to his  
 heart;

and his com-  
 plexion does not  
 always show his  
 disposition.

<sup>1</sup> MS. some. Cf. Sat. 3. 1101; 4. 1397.

Be of soe lewd behaviou<sup>r</sup>? when, in truth,  
His bodies crasis is angelicall,  
And his soules actions diabolicall.

648

If men were  
as they seeme,  
detraction would  
not profess him-  
self my friend.

Things are not as they seeme; for were they soe,  
Detraction would professe himselfe my foe,  
Shewing his rancors hate before my face,  
And not behinde my backe worke my disgrace,  
When in my presence he doth seem to be  
As Damon to his Pithias, friend to me.

652

The tradesman  
seems civil and  
honest, but he'll  
cheat you.

Mechanico, reputed by moste men  
An honest tradesman & grave citisen,

656

When thou dost come into his shop to buy,  
Although it be the least commodity,  
With kind salutes & good wordes will receave thee;  
But trust him not, in 's deeds he will deccave thee.

660

Madam's face is  
painted and her  
hair only a  
periwig.

Madam Fucata seemeth wondrous faire,  
And yet her face is painted, & her haire,  
That seemes soe goodly, a false periwig.

664

Thus all her beauty is not worth a fig,  
That doth appeare so glorious to *the* eye,  
And strikes my gallant in loves lethurgie,  
That soe doth boast of famous ancestry  
And from great Iove derives his pedigree,

668

Her gallant  
shoots out oaths  
like artillery.

And speakes indeed, like Iove himselfe, in thunder;  
For othes, as if they would rend heaven in sunder,  
Shot out in vollies, like artillerie,  
Flie from his mouth, that piece of blasphemie.

672

He puts on a  
disdainfull frown,  
[leaf 10]

Like some great horse he paceth vp and downe,  
Gracing his lookes with a disdainfull frowne,  
And takes vpon him in each company,  
As if he held some petty monarchy.

676

If any man by chance discourse of warre,  
He being present this discourse will marre  
By intermixing his high martiall deeds,  
Swearing his manhood all mens else exceeds;  
Vowing that his Herculean arme hath slaine

680

and swears he  
has killed more

More men then populous London doth containe,  
 Except the subvrbs. He hath made to flie  
 The potent Turke, & got the victory 684  
 By his owne valour. Charles the Fift of Spaine  
 Was nothing to him, nor great Tamburlaine;  
 Stout Scanderbeg a childe; he paralels  
 Strong sinnewed Sampson, or, indeed, excels. 688  
 What dares he not performe? Hee'l vndertake  
 To make the Spanniards vtterly forsake  
 The Western Indies & their mines of gold,  
 With some few chosen men; nay hee'l vpholde 692  
 His force sufficient to reconquer Fraunce,  
 And with that kingdome once againe enhaunce  
 The faire revennewes of the English crowne,  
 Or lay their citties leuell with the ground. 696  
 Hee'l chase the Turke out of Hungaria,  
 And force him leave his seat in Grecia;  
 Europe hee'l free from his vexation,  
 And bring againe that scattered nation, 700  
 The Iewes, together to their Palestine,  
 Which he by force will conquer, & confine  
 To his obeisaunce. These he dares be bolde,  
 And more then these, even acts that would make colde  
 The heartes of men only to hear recounted, 705  
 His martiall force, which Mars his force surmounted,  
 Shall vndertake. Thou vainly bragging foole,  
<sup>1</sup>Ne're trained vp in brave Bellonaes schoole, 708  
 Doe not I know, for all thou lookest see big,  
 Thou never yet durst see a sillie pig  
 Stucke to the heart? A frog would make thee run!  
 Thou kill a man? No, no! thy mothers sonne, 712  
 Her only sonne, was a true coward bred.  
 I'le vndertake a sword shall strike thee dead,  
 And never touch thee! As for thy discent,

men than London  
 contains.  
 He has put the  
 Turk to flight.

Samson and  
 Charles the Fifth  
 were nothing to  
 him.

He can drive the  
 Turk out of  
 Hungary and  
 Greece,

and restore the  
 Jews to Palestine.

He's a vain,  
 bragging fool.

His mother's  
 only son was a  
 coward.

<sup>1</sup> *descript: of coragious brag:* in margin of MS. by a later hand.

He was born in  
fertile Kent,  
and his father  
was a clown.

Though thou maist boast the place was firrill Kent 716  
That gave thee birth, yet was thy syre a clowne,  
And kept his wife in a course homespun gowne ;  
Who, scraping vp a litle wealth, began  
To fashion thee an ill shapd gentleman. 720

But because he  
has travelled  
a litle

And now, because thou hast, like Coriate,<sup>1</sup>  
Traveld a litle ground, & canst relate

[leaf 10, back]

How many baudy houses thou hast seen  
In the French country ; how the whores have been 724  
Kinder there to thee then our English punckes ;<sup>2</sup>

and seen a litle  
of French life,

How many nunnes thou hast heard sing, & monckes  
Say mattens ; thou thyselfe dost now repute  
<sup>3</sup>The wort[h]iest wort[h]y of the race of Brute ; 728

he thinks he  
excels all men in  
bravery and  
learning.

The rarest linguist England doth afford,  
The bravest soldier that e're wore a sword.

Vain vpstart braggadochio ! heartlesse cow !  
Leave Mars his drumme, goe holde thy fathers plow !

The Puritan's  
wife lives in sin,

Fine Mistris Simula, the Puritane, 733

Which as the plague shunnes all that are profane,  
Ready to faint if she an oth but hear,

For all her outward holinesse doth blear 736

and is her coun-  
try's shame.

The worldes dimme eyes, plaies but the hypocrite,  
Living in sinne & sensuall delight.

For, would you think it ? she was tane in bed  
With a young, tender, smoothfaced Ganimed, 740

Her husbands prentice. Out, lascivious whore !  
Thy countries shame, thy husbands festered sore !

Are these the fruits thy frequentation  
Of learned sermons yeilds ? Is this the fashion 744

Do their meet-  
ings lead to this,  
while the world  
thinks them so  
good ?

Of your pure seeming sect ? Your meetings tend  
Surely vnto some such like holy ende.

And yet the world, blinde world, thinkes you to be  
Men of most zeale & best integrity. 748

Methinkes I see the rich chuffe, Sordido,

<sup>1</sup> Coryate's "Crudities" first appeared in 1611.

<sup>2</sup> See "Crudities," p. 26.

<sup>3</sup> /I in margin of MS.

How basely in apparrell he doth goe;  
 Vpon his head a thrice turnd greasy felt,  
 His hose & dublet a tuffe ramskin pelt;  
 His stockings of the coursest woole yspunne,  
 Full of broad patches, with thicke hobnaild shoone;  
 His lockram bande sewde to his hempen shirt;  
 A lethern thong doth serve his wast to girt,  
 At which a pouch full 20 winters olde  
 Hangs for his codpiece to keep out the colde.  
 How hunger-starvd he lookes! With thin lank cheekes,  
 With beard vnkemd, with face fit soile for leekes, 760  
 I dare be sworne, who e'er should see the goat,  
 Would iudge him to be scarcely worth a groat.  
 And yet this boore, this miserable swine,  
 Hath landes & lordships, with good store of coine. 764  
 Slave to thy wealth, thus from thy selfe to rend  
 What thy next heir will soone as vainly spend!

Scotus, thou hast deceiud the world enough,  
 Which takes thee, clothd in thy embrodered stuffe,  
 To be some lord at least. Poore silly groome, 769  
 Which tother day wouldst faine have had the roome  
 Of some base trencher-scraper, so to put  
 Scraps twice runne over, in thy half starvd gutt. 77  
 And now, with often filling of the pot,  
 An office vnder my lords man hast got,  
 Being some bread-chipper or greasy cooke,  
 For much observance & respect dost looke. 776  
 Goe where thou wilt, thou gettest none of me.  
 I know too well thy genealogie.

Let ignorant asses bend their supple knees,  
 And cry, "God blesse your worship," for some fees 780  
 Of thy cast office; I as much doe scorne,  
 As they desire the plenty of thy horne.  
 Proud meacocke,<sup>1</sup> make the world no more believe

<sup>1</sup> The *m* has been crossed out and *p* written over by another hand.

The miser goes  
 in a greasy hat,  
 and coarse  
 clothing, his  
 linen collar  
 stitched to his  
 hempen shirt:

752

756

how hungry he  
 looks!  
 His cheeks are  
 thin, his beard  
 uncombed;  
 you would not  
 iudge him to be  
 worth a groat.

764

The world takes  
 Scotus for a lord  
 at least, but the  
 other day he was  
 [leaf 11]  
 half starved;

77

776

and now, having  
 a post under  
 somebody, he  
 looks for respect.

780

The ignorant may  
 salute him,

but I scorn him,



- Gentility is pind vpon thy sleeve ; 784  
 For if thou doe, with my satirick verse,  
 Thy parentage & manners I'le reherse,  
 And make the world, for thy monstrous othes,  
 To laugh & hisse thee out of thy fine clothes. 788  
 He that sees Moros in his brave attire  
 Would deem him to be some discreet esquire,  
 He speakes soe seldome, soe demure doth looke.  
 But see how much a man may be mistooke ;— 792  
 A verier foole dame Nature never bred,  
 That scarce knowes chalke from cheese, or blew from red ;  
 Yet amongst many *which* haue purblinde eyes  
 This foolish sot hath been thought wondrous wise. 796  
 I know a fellow (I'le conceale his name)  
 Hath purchasd, & yet doth possess, the fame  
 Of a rare scholler, that hath noe one part  
 Of learning, not the smallest dramme of art. 800  
 And will you know how he got his repute ?  
 I'le tell you, soe you'l promise to be mute  
 And make no wordes on 't. 'Tis his asses guise,  
 As soone as he from 's morning bed doth rise, 804  
 After some turne or two in Paules, to drop  
 In the precinct of some knowne stationers shop,  
 And there, like a learnd Sir, with a grave voice  
 He doth demand to see some special choice 808  
 Of famous authors, whose true names by heart  
 The foole hath gotten, of what tongue or art  
 It skills not much ; French, Latine, Hebrew, Greeke,  
 All 's one, he vnderstandeth all alike : 812  
 Montaignes *Essaies* in French,<sup>1</sup> the history  
 Of Philip Comineus,<sup>2</sup> poesie  
 Of Virgil, Horace, & such Latin writers,  
 St. Austine, Bernard, or some new enditers 816
- and will make  
the world laugh  
at him and hiss  
him.
- Moros, who is  
a very fool,  
speaks so seldom  
and looks so  
demure, that  
many think him  
wise.
- I know a man  
who gained a  
repute for  
learning
- by attending  
booksellers' shops  
and asking to see  
the writings of  
famous authors—
- Montaigne, whose  
*Essays* in French,  
books 1 and 2, were  
first published in  
1580; books 1, 2,  
and 3 in 1588.
- [leaf 11, back]  
Virgil, Horace,  
Augustine,  
Bernard,

<sup>1</sup> English translation published in 1603, 2nd ed. in 1613.

<sup>2</sup> Philip de Comines died in 1509. He wrote memoirs of his own time.

Of commentaries theological ;

And sometimes he's for philosophical,

And the best writers of astronomie,

With phisick, logicke, & geometrie.

820

Then Aristotle, Di[o]scorides,

Aristotle, Dioscorides, Galen,

Avicen, Galen, & Hypocrates ;

The Hebrew Rabbins, Ptolomeus, Plato

Ptolemy, and Plato,

(Although the foole did never learne his Cato),

824

Are in his mouth familiar. Some of these,

Which to demaund his fancy best doth please,

He for some hower or two will pore vpon,

and poring  
over them for an  
hour or two.

Which time is worth your observation ;

828

For sometime smiling with a simpring grace,

In turning over those same leaves apace,

To shew his skill i' th' tongues, hee'l nod his head,

Nodding his  
head, smiling,

As if the place which he doth seeme to read

832

Mov'd him to laughter ; then with thumb hee'l cote,

As if that sentence were of speciall note,

And straight cry "pish !" as if he dislikd that

and crying  
"Pish !" some-  
times,

Which he as much knowes as his grandams cat.

836

Well, having (as he thinkes) sufficiently

Guld the opinion of the standers by

To his desire, the booke he downe doth lay,

Demaunds the price, dislikes it, goes his way.

840

Sometime perhaps, to blinde dull iudgements eye,

he demands the  
price, and some-  
times will buy a  
petty English  
Pamphlet to gull  
the by-standers.

Some petty English pamphlet he will buie.

Thus hath this gull, among the common sort,

Which iudge by outward shewes, got the report

844

Of a great scholler, when, God knowes, the foole

Was never farther then the grammer schoole.

Thus mans opinion doth him oft deceave,

And of true iudgement doth his minde bereave.

848

Iudging by outward shewes we iudge amisse,

If we judge by  
outward appear-  
ances we judge  
amiss :

For vice in vertues habite clothed is.

Hypocrisie seemes holinesse in looke,

Fixing his eyes on heaven or in his booke.

852

	O, 'tis a most dissembling, harmfull devill, That 's good in shew & yet in heart is evill.	
hatred is often beneath salutation;	Backbiting slander, deep dissimulation, Are inside hate, yet outside salutation.	856
valour is only cowardice in disguise;	Vanting in wordes true valour oft doth seeme, Yet by his actions we him coward deem;	
flattery takes the form of good counsel;	Soothing vp ill, pernicious flattery, In outward shew good counsel seemes to be.	860
[leaf 12]	Deformity, daubde with a face of paint, With beauties tittle doth herselfe a[c]quaint;	
avarice is accounted thrift;	Base avarice & sordid parsimony Is thrift <sup>1</sup> accounted, & good husbandry;	864
prodigality,	Excessive spending, sensuall prodigality,	
liberality.	Is thought all one with liberality; Impudent boldnesse, rash temerity, Is held for vertuous audacity;	868
Ignorance passes for learning, while learning is held in no repute.	Ignorance in his scarlet robe yclad, Accounted learning, in respect is had, When vertuous <sup>2</sup> art, clothed in poor aray, Is held in no repute, till time bewray	872
Put no trust in seeming.	The seeming good that ignorance hath not, And the not seeming good that art hath got. Thus ther's no trust to be reposde in seeming, Since virtue's knowne by act, not by esteeming.	876

<sup>1</sup> MS. thrift.<sup>2</sup> Originally written *verteous*, but altered apparently by another hand into *vertuous*.

## Sat[ira] 3.

[AGAINST PRIDE, ETC.]

## ARGUMENTUM.

Dum tendit superos ambire superbia cœlos,  
Decidit ad Stigium fulmine quassa lacum.  
Æterno verum sic indignata perisse,  
Cœcos mortales ad sua regna trahit.

After the fabricke of heaven, earth, & seas  
Were gloriously composde, it then did please  
High Iove (e're he began mans operation)  
To give vnto the Angels their creation.  
No earthy substance was in them at all,  
Their formes were heavenly & spirituall.  
Yet some of these, vpon the very day  
They were by God created (if I say  
Vntruth, I can alleadge mine author for it),  
Swelling with pride (oh, I to write abhor it)  
Because they were such glorious creatures, strove  
To take possession of the throne of Iove.  
But he, displeasde with such ambition,  
Struck them with lightning downe to Acheron,  
And them confined perpetually to dwell  
In the darke horror of infernall hell.  
Thus were faire angels ougly devils made,  
And one dayes sinne an everlasting trade.

After the creation  
of the heavens  
and the earth,  
angels were  
called into being.

880

On the very day  
of their creation  
they attempted  
to dethrone the  
Almighty,

884

888

who drove them  
into hell.

892

After the fall of  
these, man was  
created and  
woman made to  
be his associate

After the fall of these was man compacted,  
And from him sleeping woman was extracted 896  
And made to be a kinde associat

[leaf 12, back]

Vnto him. Now the devill shewes his hate  
And swelling envie 'gainst God in his creature  
Formd to his image, man; to make defeature 900  
Of his estate in blisse, he doth intend  
And fittest opportunity attend.

To work their  
fall Lucifer seeks  
an opportunity,

To worke this feat proud Lucifer's enioynd,  
And goe[s] about it swifter then the winde. 904  
"Shall I," quoth he, "fall from celestiaall blisse

thinking to ease  
his own pain by  
making man co-  
partner in his  
grief.

Into the horrozr of hells blacke abysses,  
And man escape? Shall I in torment live,  
And man in pleasure? Shall I only grieve, 908  
And man goe scotfree? No, 'twill ease my paine  
If in my grieve I him copartner gaine;  
And I will doe it: if my plots hit right,  
I'll bring his soule vnto perpetuall night." 912  
This saide, the serpents shape he takes & hies  
Vnto the tree in midst of Paradise.

Eve's mind he  
inspires with  
pride,

There findes the woman, after namèd Eve,  
The weakest vessel, easiest to deceave; 916

causing her to eat  
of the tree of  
knowledge.

Whose minde with hellish pride he straight inspire  
That she [the] trees forbidden fruit desire;  
The tree of which alone she might not eat,  
The tree forbidden by the Lord for meat. 920

The tree of knowledge, knowledge of much evill,  
She gathers straight, seduced by the devill,  
Which greedilie, without advice, she tasted,  
And then to give her husband of it hasted. 924

Grown wise,  
Adam and Eve

Whom when she had allurde vnto her will,  
And both had tasted, then they knew their ill;  
But all too late (first Phrygians<sup>1</sup>) they grew wise,

<sup>1</sup> This may refer to the Phrygian oracle which promised empire to him who untied the Gordian knot, cut by Alexander the Great. Or it may be an allusion to the low estimate in which Phrygian character was held by the ancients.

Being both thrust forth Edens Paradise ; 928 lost Paradise,  
*Which* happy place man ever had possessed, which man  
 If they had never in this sorte transgressed. would ever have  
 Vnhappy three, first causers of our evill, possessed.  
 Fond man, proude woman, & accursèd devill ! 932  
 Since this hath pride increasd with Adams seed, Since this, pride  
 And Lucifer companions shall not need ; has gone on  
 Man with soe many kindes of pride doth swell increasing in  
 As if he strove headlong to run to hell. 936 Adam's seed.  
 Some shew their pride in raysing stately bowers, Some show their  
*Which* seem to threatne heaven like Babell towers ; pride in stately  
 Building so strong, erecting them so high, buildings,  
 As if they ment to live eternally, 940  
 In spite of Iove. Others bestow more cost and some in  
 In houses built for pleasure, *which* they boast houses built for  
 Are but for shew, then would maintaine & cherish pleasure.  
 Thousands of poore soules *which* are like to perish : 944 [leaf 13]  
 Confusion sure will light on their pretence  
 Which wast their treasure in soe vaine expence.  
 Others there be *which*, clad in gay attire, Others, in fine  
 In stately gate & loftie lookes, aspire 948 clothing and  
 Above their ranke ; holding inferiors base, lofty locks,  
 Scarsely *permitting* equalles come in place, aspire above  
 Of fellowship, vnlesse their peacock sutes their rank.  
 Gaine them admittance in their proud reputes. 952  
 O, these are men of admiration,  
 Which follow each fantastique fashion, These follow each  
 To be observde with reverence & respect ; vain fashion,  
 When, if we could the inward man detect, but their gay  
 God knowes that I am not deceavd a whit, 956 apparel covers  
 Their gay apparrell covers litle witt. little wit.  
 Most of our women are extreamly proud  
 Of their faire lookes, & therfore doe enshroud 960  
 Their beauties in a maske ; with greater care  
 Their faces then their soules, to keepen faire.  
 Some of this kinde when beauty gins decay,  
 Most of our  
 women are  
 proud—they  
 paint their faces.

By art restore what nature takes away, 964  
 Painting their visage. Cursed Iesabell  
 That taught them this, will bring them all to hell.  
 This vice in woeman only doth not bide,

The men curl  
 their pates and  
 wear love-locks;  
 others paint their  
 faces.

Men alsoe are infected with this pride. 968  
 Some curl their pates to make their lookes more fair,<sup>1</sup>  
 Others delight to wear a locke of haire,

A lovelocke, which being of the longest size  
 Doth the lewd wearer quite effeminize. 972  
 Nay some with fucus will besmear their face,  
 It ads to their complexion better grace.

I know one who  
 is ever looking in  
 his glass, setting  
 his perfumed  
 beard or combing  
 his hair.

I knowe a snowt-faire, selfe-conceited asse,  
 Which is still prying in a looking glasse 976

To see his fooles face, washt with ly o 'th' chamber,  
 And set his beard, perfumde with greece of amber,  
 Or kembe his civet lockes, soe far in love  
 With his owne beauty, that I fear hee'l proove 980  
 Sicke with conceat; for the which maladie  
 I can prescribe no better remedy

The fate of  
 Narcissus might  
 cure him.

Then wish the glasse, wherin he views his face,  
 A river, him to take Narcissus place, 984  
 So the next time he came on 's face to looke  
 He should be drenchèd in the liquid brooke.

But leaving him a courting in the glasse  
 His owne vaine shadowe, I this coxcome passe. 988

[leaf 13, back]

Some delight in  
 hearing them-  
 selves speak, and  
 tire all men with  
 their chatter.

Others there be which, selfe-conceited wise,  
 Take a great pride in their owne vaine surmise,  
 That all men think them soe; these take delight  
 To hear themselves speak; if they can recite 992  
 A thing scarce worth the hearing, they will prate  
 Till they tire all men with their idle chatt.

Some, like  
 Phaeton, aspire  
 at honours far  
 above what they  
 deserve,

Others, ambitious like fond Phaeton,  
 Aspire to guide the chariot of the sunne, 996  
 Aiming at honours far above their place,  
 Till by their pride they worke their owne disgrace.

<sup>1</sup> Margin worn away: may have been *faire*.

- Presumptuous pride in others doth remaine,  
 And these high Ioves almighty power disdaine, 1000  
 And (like those giants) fight against the gods,  
 Till, Pharoah like, they scourgèd are with rods  
 Of dire affliction, & their hardned hearts  
 Vnto their guilty soule dispaire impartes. 1004  
 But I too much insist in generall :—  
 Pride in particular must be dealt withall.  
 He that desires to breake a bunch of wandes,  
 Must not take all at once into his handes, 1008  
 But singlie, one by one ; and if he trie,  
 He may then break them with facility.  
 Reader, doe thou the application make,  
 For I to other matters me betake. 1012
- Proud Romish prelat, triple crownèd Pope,  
 Which vauntst of Peters heavenly keis, that ope  
 The dore that leads vnto celestiall blisse ;  
 Which makst great princes stoope thy foote to kisse,  
 Emperours vpon thy stirrop to attend, 1017  
 When as thou wilt thy stately horse ascend ;  
 Damd Antichrist, proud Lucifers first sonne,  
 Ambitious beast, great whore of Babilon ! 1020  
 Thou false vsurper of Gods regal throne, -  
 How darst assume his honour, which, alone  
 Monarch of heaven & earth, disdaine[s] to see  
 Corriuals in his sacred Emperie ? 1024  
 How darst thou take vpon thee such authority  
 Which doth belong to Gods high majesty,  
 To forgive sinnes, to award heaven & hell  
 At thine owne pleasure ? Wher didst learne to swell  
 With such ambition ? Thinkst thou Peeters chaire  
 Can sheild thee from Gods wrath ? Can once impaire  
 And lessen thy deservèd punnishment ?  
 Can free thee from eternall detriment ? 1032  
 Thinkst thou that he presumption can abide,  
 Which did not spare his angels for their pride ?

and are punished  
 for their pre-  
 sumption.

I have dealt long  
 enough with  
 generalities, I  
 come now to  
 particulars.

The Pope makes  
 princes kiss his  
 feet, and emperors  
 hold his stirrup,  
 as Frederick  
 Barbarossa did  
 that of Alexander  
 III. [*Coryate's  
 Crudities*, p. 201,  
 ed. 1611.]

He is a false  
 usurper of God's  
 honour.

Peter's chair can  
 not shield him  
 from God's  
 anger.



No. Thou shalt finde that he will vengeance take,  
Sending thee headlong to the Stygian lake. 1036

[leaf 14]  
Madam Poppæa  
is so stately that  
she can neither  
sit nor walk  
alone.

Maddam Poppæa is soe stately growne  
That she can neither sit nor walke alone ;  
Store of attendants still must wait vpon her,  
And doe obsequious homage to her hono<sup>ur</sup>. 1040

Cloth of Arras  
must be her  
carpet, her horse  
must be shod  
with gold.

She bathes in  
goats' milk.

The ground she thinkes vnworthy is to bear  
Her precious body ; when she doth vprear  
Her selfe vpon her feet, there must be spread  
Rich clothes of Arras wher she goes to tread. 1044

If she doe ride, the horse that must vpholde  
So rare a burden must be shod with golde.

When she intends to wash her selfe she hath  
Of goats pure milck a sweet prepared bath. 1048

Musick beyond the musick of the speares  
Must still attend vpon her itching<sup>1</sup> eares.

How can the  
Fates permit her  
to go on un-  
punished ?

Her food must be Ambrosian delicates,  
Dissolvèd pearle her drink. Impartial fates ! 1052

How can ye suffer this lascivious quean  
Thus swell in pride, thus swim in pleasures streame,  
And holde your thunder fast ? Proud, stately dame,  
Which more respectst thy body then thy fame, 1056

The Almighty,  
who slew Herod  
for his pride, will  
punish her.

Or thy soules health, know that all working Power  
Which did confound (by wormes that did devour  
His cursed body) Herods lofty pride,  
Will, when thou thinkst thou art most diedied, 1060  
Severely punnish with confusion,  
To thy soules horro<sup>ur</sup>, this presumption.

Lucius spends  
his all to maintain  
his harlot in  
luxury.

Lucius spends his substance & his store,  
To keep in gallant fashion his proud whore, 1064  
Yet al's to litle to maintaine her pride ;  
She must be coatcht, forsooth, & bravely ride.  
Lackies before her charriot must run,  
And she in spangled gold, clothd like the sunne, 1068  
Dazels the eyes of men, or she complains

<sup>1</sup> MS. 'itching.

He loves her not, & such a man maintaines  
 His love in better fashion! Then his land  
 Must flie, for soe his mistris doth command,  
 To bolster vp her pride. O foolish sot,  
 Thus to procure thy reputations blot,  
 Thy states vndooing, & thy soules perdition  
 For on[e] soe base & of soe vile condition!

1072

His lands go to  
 minister to her  
 pride.

Drusus, that fashion-imitating ape,  
 Delights to follow each fantastique shape;  
 Every new habit of hell-hac[t]hed sinne,  
 Though it vndoe him, hee'l be clothed in;  
 And prodigally vpon every toy  
 Lash out his substance; 'tis his only ioy  
 To see himsele not differing in a hair  
 From the true stamp of a brave Cavaleer.

1076

Drusus imitates  
 the fashions like  
 an ape, and will  
 dress like  
 cavalier.

1080

Vain Epainnutus, selfe-admiring gull,  
 Doth speake orations, write whole volumes full  
 Of his owne praises. Silly, simple sotte,  
 Hast thou that auncient, true saide sawe forgot,  
 That "a mans praise in his owne mouth doth stinke"?  
 Or dost (foole if thou dost) absurdly think  
 This age such shallow pated men affords,  
 That will give credit to thy boasting wordes?

1084

[leaf 14, back]  
 Another writes  
 volumes of his  
 own praises,

1088

Because in gay apparell thou art drest  
 Some puppet-like thou dost aduance thy crest,  
 And swell in big lookes like some turkie cocke,  
 Ready to burst with pride, & even to choake  
 With selfe-conceit of thy perfection,  
 Which is iust now, though the infection  
 Of thy high leveld thoughts lets thee not see  
 The ougly face of thy deformity.

1092

and because he is  
 well-dressed is  
 bursting with  
 pride.

1096

Thou which thinkst Adon, that same lovely boy,  
 Dame Natures dareleng, Cithereas joy,  
 A taunie Negro, or Barbarian Moore,  
 Compared to thy selfe, & dost adore  
 Even thine owne beauty like some demigod,

1100

He thinks Adonis  
 a Negro compared  
 to himself,

1104

- and fancies his  
 good looks ravish  
 the eyes of all  
 who see him,  
 Which (for on purpose thou dost goe abroad  
 To shew thy selfe), thou vainely dost surmise  
 Doth even ravish the beholders eyes. 1108  
 Noe wench that sees thee, but straight falls in love  
 With thy rare feature, & doth wish to prove  
 The tast of thy Ambrosian lip; one kisse  
 From thy mirre-breathing mouth were endless blisse;  
 But gavst thou other joyes (*which* in thee lies) 1113  
 They would be thought 'bove ioyes of paradise.  
 Thou bladder full puffed vp with vanity,  
 Whom with my pen I prick, that ther might[t] fie 1116  
 Out into open aire all windy pride,  
 All self-conceit; then being repurified,  
 Before the purchase of all earthly pelfe  
 Learn Solons saying, "Mortall, know thy selfe." 1120  
 Neotimus, why art thou-growne so proud,  
 Instead of Iuno to embrace a cloud  
 I' nothing worth? These honours heaped vpon thee  
 Are but as shadowes, & will soone fie from thee. 1124  
 Ther is an everlasting dignity  
 Of greater worth and more insignity,  
 To be sought out, *which* thou shalt ne're attaine,  
 If pride in thy aspiring thoughts doe reigne. 1128  
 Contemne not them because thy selfe art high,  
 Who, if the heavens had pleas'd, might equally  
 Have rankd with thee, yet now are low in state;  
 All men are not predestind to on[e] fate. 1132  
 Become more humble, & cast downe thy looke,  
 Least prides bait snare thee on the devils hooke,  
 And having caught thee, hale thee downe to hell,  
 With fiends in everlasting paines to dwell. 1136  
 For why shouldst thou be proud 'cause thou art high  
 In titles of renowned dignity?  
 Honour 's a flower that will soon decay;  
 Honour 's a vapour, quickly blowne away; 1140  
 And 'tis a saying held for true of all,  
 Honour is a  
 flower, a vapour,  
 and is soon  
 blown away.

[leaf 15]  
 and forgets that  
 he might have  
 been as low as  
 those whom he  
 despises.

"A sudden rising hath a sudden fall."

Philarchus (*which* in his ambitious minde  
 Devoures whole kingdomes) doth smale comfort finde  
 In his olde vnckles new-framde married<sup>1</sup> life, 1145  
 But lesse in the male issue of his wife.  
 The bastard brat (for soe he calles his cozen)  
 Defrauds his expectation of a dozen 1148  
 Of goodly lordships, *which* (his hopes were faire)  
 Should come to him, as the next lawfull heire.  
 But now this boy, *which* stands as a crosse-barre  
 Twixt him & home, doth all his fortunes marre. 1152  
 But long he shall not soe, if figs of Spaine,  
 Or pils of Italy<sup>2</sup> their force retaine;  
 If ther be meanes that his pretence will further,  
 If ther be hands that dare enact a murder, 1156  
 Hee'l send his soule (wher himselfe ne're shall come)  
 To Abrahams bosome (mans long lookd for home).  
 Nor shall his aged vnckle 'scape this net,  
 Least if he live he doe more sonnes beget; 1160  
 Least he more issue by this marriage have,  
 He shalbe wedded shortly to his grave.  
 But then his vnckles wife surviues, purchance  
 Left quick with childe; & then he may goe dance 1164  
 For a new living; no, he likes not that,  
 She shall be soone pact after too, that 's flat;  
 Besides, her ioynture, in his heart engravde  
 With duble greatnesse, by her death is savde. 1168  
 Ambitious slave! wilt make a crimson flood  
 Of thy neare dearest kinsmens vitall blood,  
 To wash thy murderous handes? Think not at all  
 Vpon a deed so much vnnaturall! 1172  
 Shall hope of some vain titles move thy minde,  
 To doe an act perpetually combinde  
 With horrore of a guilty conscience

Philarchus is  
 annoyed because  
 his old uncle is  
 married and has  
 a son,

who, if he lives,  
 will defraud him  
 of the property  
 he expected.

The child and his  
 father must be  
 got rid of, and so  
 must the wife.

He will bathe his  
 hands in his  
 kinsmen's blood

[leaf 15, back]

<sup>1</sup> This word seems to have been originally written *marriag*.

<sup>2</sup> Referring to the practice of secret poisoning.

- (A most deservèd & due recompence) 1176
- to gain a little  
land. Wilt thou for purchase of a litle land,  
With innocent blood distaine thy guilty hand?  
Desist; for murder's an iniquity
- Their blood will  
cry to heaven for  
vengeance. That for iust vengeance vnto heaven doth crie. 1180  
And darst thou then insist in thy invention?  
Is there noe hope to alter thine intention?  
No! Thou art flesht in sinne, & dost despise  
My Christian counsell; Satan blinde[s] thine eyes. 1184  
Goe forward then in this lewd preparation,  
But know thou headlong runst vnto damnation.
- Thus Lucifer  
strives to increase  
the inhabitants of  
hell. Thus Lucifer, *which* through ambition fell,  
Strives dayly to bring company to hell 1188  
Of each degree & sex, from every nation.  
Mortals, become more wise; make preparation  
Of armes defensiuè to resist this devill  
*Which* would procure *your* everlasting evill. 1192  
But you, whose vnrelenting heartes *persist*  
In fearfull pride, will then cry, "had I wist,"  
Yet all too late, when each his sinne shall rue;  
You having *your* iust meed, & hell his due. 1196  
Thoug[h] God awhile his punnishment delay,  
A thing deferd's not taken quite away.  
But now enough of Luciferian pride,  
Ther's other vices in the world beside. 1200
- When it is too  
late men will see  
their error.

## Sat[ira] 4.

[AGAINST AVARICE, BRIBERY, APOSTASY.]

## ARGUMENTUM.

Effodiuntur opes ex imo viscere terræ,  
 Quæ fiunt miseri causa, cibusque mali.  
 Omnia sunt auro nostræ vænalia Romæ,  
 Ius, pudor, & probitas, favor & ipse deus.

Insatiate Avarice then first began  
 To raigne in the depraved minde of man  
 After his fall; & then his mother Earth,  
 That gave first being to his bodies birth, 1204  
 Vngracious childe, he did begin to wound,  
 And rend the bowels of the harmelesse ground;  
 For precious metals & rare minerals<sup>1</sup> ies  
 Her veines, her sinnewes, & her arteries. 1208  
 Among these, Golde, Dame Tellus glittering sunne,  
 Was with his sister Sylver, earth[s] bright moone,  
 Digd from the center of rich Aurimont,  
 Sol & his sister Phebe to confront. 1212  
 But for that silver golde in price doth follow,  
 Because from him, as Cynthia from Apollo,  
 She takes her light, & other mettals all  
 Are but his vassaile starres; they well may fall 1216

Avarice soon  
 took possession  
 of man's mind,

and induced him  
 to search the  
 earth for  
 treasures,

for gold and  
 silver and rare  
 minerals.

[leaf 16]

<sup>1</sup> The final *s* is 'smudged,' and the Author's comma is after *ies*—thus: *minerals ies*,. The sense is not very clear, but it seems to mean, Avarice, for precious metals and minerals, eyes (i. e. searches) her veins, &c.

Vnder his title, therfore I 'le expresse  
 Others in him, the great includes the lesse.  
 He that first searched the teeming earth for golde,  
 Now as a demigod per'haps enrolde 1220  
 In Fames eternal booke, was the chief cause  
 Of wronging right & abrogating lawes.  
 For since these mines bewi[t]ehd the mindes of men,  
 What mischiefs haue ensude my worthlesse pen 1224  
 Cannot delineat, but we all can tell  
 The number infinitely doth excell;  
 Omitting former ages & strange climes,  
 The vices of our nation in these times, 1228  
 So far excede in quality & number,  
 That to recite them would whole volumes cumber.  
 Iustice, opprest by golden bribery,  
 Hath left the earth-stage of mortality 1232  
 And fled to heaven for succour & defence,  
 Wher she doth keep eternall residence;  
 And now our lawes for Mammons cursed golde  
 Like as at open mart are bought & solde. 1236  
 Our lawyers, like Demosthenes, are mute,  
 And will not speak, though in a rightfull sute,  
 Vnlesse a golden kei vnlocke their tongue;  
 Then how thei'l sweat, be it for right or wrong, 1240  
 And get their cause too, or it shall goe hard,  
 When the poore client, of his right debard,  
 Cursing the law, first for mans good ordainde,  
 Grieves at his losse, which ne're can be regainde. 1244  
 Let some damnd villaine of all grace bereft  
 Commit a murder, sacriledge, or theft,  
 And if he can procure but store of pence  
 Our iustice then will with the law dispence, 1248  
 And grant the hell-hound life, when, for lesse cause,  
 Poore men abide the rigor of the lawes.  
 Let lustfull Iove, that virgins would defloure,  
 In Danaes lap rain but a golden shower, 1252

He who first  
 sought gold was  
 the cause of  
 'wronging right.'

The mischiefs  
 which have  
 ensued are  
 numberless.

Justice, oppressed  
 by Bribery, has  
 left the earth.

Lawyers plead no  
 man's cause  
 unpaid.

Murder, sacrilege,  
 theft, lust, are all  
 purged by money.

Her chastety will soone be washt away,  
And she be ready for his amarus play.

Let some rich cufte, Thersites-like in shape,

Of far worse qualeties then an olde ape,

1256 An old wretch  
who can't speak  
without slauering

Which hath nought in him that may speake him man,

But a good purse; although he scarcely can

Speake without slauering, goe without a crutch,

Be rivall to a man that is not such

1260

In wealth, though far above him in desertes,

As good discent, rare features, vertuous partes;

Yet for all this, I ten to one will lay,

The richer man carries the wench away.

1264 [leaf 16, back]  
will gain a wife  
where a poor man  
of good parts  
will fail.

Honours & offices, which in times of olde

Were given for desertes, are bought for golde.

Sir Iohn Lacklattin, one that ne're did passe

In any place, but for an ignorant asse,

1268

If he can grease his patron in the fist,

Shall for his gold be richly benefide;

When he that better doth deserve the place,

If poore, shall be repulsed with disgrace.

1272 Honours and  
offices are  
bestowed upon  
the ignorant  
because they can  
pay.

Lode but a silly asse with store of golde

And he will enter in the strongest holde.

Let a foole passe by in a golden coate,

He shalbe reckond for a man of note

1276

By those that know him not, when on[e] that's wise,

Poore in arraie, seemes abiect in their eyes.

Tradesmen make no account for golden gaine

To sell their soules vnto eternall paine;

1280 Tradesmen cheat,  
and cozen and  
forswear  
themselves.

Daily each one, in vttering of his wares,

Cosens his chapmen & himselfe forsweares.

The vserer hords golde vp in his chest,

Making an idole of it. To be blest

1284 The usurer hoards  
up gold

Is to get store of golde, the wre[t]ch doth thinke;

When the fruition scarcely lets him winke,

For sleep he cannot, till i' th' end his pelfe

Shipwracks his soule vpon hels rocky shelve.

1288 and shipwrecks  
his soul.



- Many for golde have turnd (like Iulian)  
 Apostates to true religion,  
 And have, with wicked Iudas, Iesus sold  
 For the vaine purchase of a litle golde. 1292
- Thus doth the devill, full of slic deceits,  
 Fish for the soules of men with golden baits;  
 And to increase his kingdome, doth assay  
 By this temptation to pervert our way. 1296
- Well did the Lacedæmons banish golde  
 Out of their common wealth; well did they holde  
 Community of all things necessary;  
 For by this meanes they were not accessary 1300
- Vnto the many kindes of wickednes,  
 Which the vnsatiable greedinesse  
 Of golde in this our iron age begets;  
 Which to entrap, so many kinde of nets, 1304
- So many damnd plots are dayly laide;  
 He that gets moste thinks himselfe best apaide,  
 And well he may, for in a golden string  
 A man may lead the world to any thing. 1308
- What in these days may not a man command,  
 That seekes to purchase with a golden hand?  
 Fortunate Fatuo was late dubd a knight,  
 Not for his wit, or for his martiall fight; 1312
- For wit ne're blest him, valour never knewe him;  
 What may the cause be then that only drew him  
 To this preferment? Faith, his store of wealth,  
 For honours now ar[e] purchasèd by stealth 1316
- Of vndermining bribes. Canst thou disburse  
 Good store of coine from a well lined purse?  
 Thou shalt not want authority to grace thee,  
 And in an office of repute to place thee, 1320
- Be thy life ne're so vilde. O evill times,  
 And ill conditioned men, that act such crimes,  
 Which great meanes then good meaning better deeme,  
 And more of goods then goodnesse doe esteeme! 1324

Some, Iudas like,  
 sell Iesus for  
 gold.

The Lacedæmo-  
 nians banished  
 gold from their  
 commonwealth.

He who guins  
 most is best off,  
 for the world  
 may be led in a  
 golden string.

[leaf 17]

One is dubbed a  
 knight because  
 by stealth he can  
 buy the honour.

Men now esteem  
 great means  
 more than great-  
 ness, and goods  
 more than  
 goodness.

But bootlesse I exclaime on this same age,  
 This vnrelenting age, whose furious rage  
 Will not be mollified as it hath been,  
 But is now hardned in vngodly sinne.  
 Yet, though the world nothing the better grow,  
 I'lle rip vp all the villanies I know.

1328

Though the  
 world may be  
 none the better,  
 I'll expose all its  
 villanies.

Flavia, because her meanes are somewhat scant,  
 Doth sell her body to relieve her want,  
 Yet scornes to be reputed as a quean,  
 Though with moste nations she have been vnclean.  
 English, Scots, Dutch, French, Spannish, yea, black  
 Moor[es],<sup>1</sup>

1332

Flavia, scornng  
 to be called a  
 quean, sells her  
 body to all  
 comers,

If they bring store of gold, her open dores  
 Conveigh to private lust; bee't day or night,  
 Golde vshers them to sensuall delight.  
 Thus often fighting vnder Cupids banner  
 Perhaps she's sometimes taken in the manner,  
 And being brought before authority,  
 Which should correct her hell-bread villany,  
 If golde speake for her in the present tense,  
 The officer deputed for th' offence  
 Will winck at smale faultes & remit correction.  
 This foolish, knavish pittie's an infection  
 Spread through our land, & hurtes our common wealth—  
 Iustice restore her to her former health!  
 For true's the saying (magistrates, beware!)  
 "He harmes the good that doth the evill spare."

1336

no matter of what  
 nation they may  
 be.

1340

1344

If she's brought  
 before the  
 magistrate the  
 prosecutor can be  
 bribed.

1348

Midas is patron to a goodly living,

And Stolido, that dunce, hath now been driving  
 A price for it. What, benefices solde?

1352

Benefices are  
 bought and sold:

This was not wont to be in times of olde,  
 But Simonie is now soe common growne,  
 That 'tis account noe sinne, if kept vnknowne.  
 Or<sup>2</sup> otherwise, lawes danger to prevent,  
 The patron with the parson will indent

1356

[leaf 17, back]  
 Simony is so  
 common that  
 men don't care  
 to hide it.

<sup>1</sup> MS. worn away.

<sup>2</sup> MS. O'.

That he shall have the living in this wise,  
 Suffering him yearly to reserve his tithes ; 1360  
 When the whole parish knowes the better part  
 Of all the living, those his tithes imparte.  
 Thou wicked imp, thus to abuse the C[h]urch,  
 And with such sacrilegious handes to lurch 1364  
 Gods sacred duties, *which* he doth afford  
 To the dispensers of his holy word !  
 How dar'st thou with all-seeing Iove dissemble ?  
 Me thinkes thou shouldst with great amazment tremble  
 At that most fearfull yet just punishment 1369  
 Powrd downe one Ananias, whose intent,  
 Like thine, was in most damnd hypocrisie  
 To mocke God with a shew of charity. 1372  
 But for this sinne he & his cursèd wife  
 Suddenly fell downe dead & lost his life.  
 Take heed the like plague fall not on thy head,  
 If thou *persist*, high Iove can strike thee dead ; 1376  
 Though he awhile forbear to shew his ire,  
 His mercy keeps back what thy sinnes require.  
 Signior Necessity, that hath no law,  
 Scarce ever read his Litleton,<sup>1</sup> a daw 1380  
 To a solliciter, is now become  
 Iustice of peace & coram ; takes his roome  
 'Mongst grave & learned Iudges ; is still cald  
 Right worshipfull, his wit & pate both bald. 1384  
 And yet the foole expects th' ensuing year  
 To be elect high sherif of all the sheire.  
 I, & he hath great hopes, for the whole tribe  
 Of voices that elect the sherif hee 'l bribe ; 1388  
 And after that he hopes to get consent  
 By this meanes to be knight o' th' parliament.  
 Base minded peasants, *which* for some few pence  
 Give to [a] foole such place of eminence ! 1392  
 Ignoble Crassus did in litle time

<sup>1</sup> Littleton died in 1481.

It is very wrong  
 to deceive the  
 Church and  
 dissemble with  
 God.

Men who do so  
 should remember  
 the fate of  
 Ananias

The man who  
 is ignorant of the  
 law is made a  
 Justice of the  
 Peace,

and expects to be  
 sheriff and M. P.  
 He'll bribe the  
 lot to gain his  
 end.

Vnto the top of honours mountaine clime ;

If you aske how he rose, let this suffice,

His wealth was great, & therfore needs must rise. 1396 Men whose wealth  
is great must  
rise.

Ruffino, that same roring boy of fame,

By braules & wenchis is diseased & lame ;

Yet hath some store of crownes left in his purse,

Which he with all his heart would fain disburse, 1400

And those that healt him benefactours call,

To get a place in the new hospitall.

Fear not Ruffino, for it is decreed

Those that have meanes to give shall only speed. 1404

Loth am I to rip vp my nurces shame,

Or to accuse for this those schooles of fame,

The Academies : yet for reformation

Of this abuse, I must reprove the fashion

1408 The Universities  
are not free from  
blame.

Of divers seniors, which for private gaine

Permit some ignorant asse, some dunce, attaine

A schollers or a fellowes place among 'em.

Some think perhaps of malice I doe wrong 'em, 1412

But the poore students know it to be true,

Which wanting meanes, as often want their due.

Art was not thus rejected heertofore,

But plenty now hath made a scholler poore. 1416

Learning was wont to be the highest staire,

Vpon whose top was fixd preferments chaire ;

In which the best deserver was instald,

The worthiest man to highest honour cald. 1420

But now the world's altred, changed is the molde,

And learnings step is turnd to massie golde.

To get preferment who doth now intend,

He by a golden ladder must ascend. 1424

Thus cursed golde doth bear soe great a sway

That nurseries of learning doe decay ;

For not the meanes of taking our degrees

Are quite exempt from bribes ; for duple fees

A dunce may turne a Doctour, & in state

1428 For double fees a  
dunce may be a  
doctor and walk  
in scarlet.

Even admission  
to the hospital is  
to be gained by  
money.

[leaf 18]

A dunce may  
buy a fellowship.

Learning used to  
be the ladder to  
preferment,

but now the  
ladder is made of  
golde.

If a cook wants to  
dress meat in  
Lent,

and can bribe the  
overseer,

he is sure to  
escape all trouble.

A ruffian com-  
mitted a murder  
and was appre-  
hended for it.  
[leaf 18, back]

The Judge was  
bribed, and  
instead of  
condemning,

acquitted him  
because '40  
angels' attested  
his innocence.

Walke in his scarlet ! O, vnhappy fate !  
When paltry pelfe doth worthlesse ignorance  
Vnto the top of learnings mount aduance. 1432  
Cocus, that faine would thrive, hath a[n] intent,  
To curry favour, to dresse meat in Lent—  
How is 't to be obtainde ? hast store of golde ?  
And canst thou spare a litle ? then be bolde, 1436  
Persue thy project, & I 'le vndertake  
The overseers will a licence make,  
By *which* is granted leav to dresse for th' sicke,—  
Vnder the colour of *which* pretty tricke 1440  
Thou mayst make sale of it to whom thou list.  
Sayth master mony-taker, greasd i' th' fist,  
"And if tho[u] comst in danger, for a noble  
I 'le stand thy friend, & heale thee out of trouble." 1444  
But these are petty crimes *which* now I cote,  
This vicious age acts sinnes of greater note,  
And them by greater persons, in *which* sence  
Th' offenders greatnesse aggravates th' offence. 1448  
Taurus, that ruffen, in his drunken fit  
An execrable murder did committe,  
For the *which* fact he straight was apprehended,  
And should, had right tooke place, have been con-  
demned. 1452  
But marke th' event ; his mony stood his friend,  
And sav'd the caitife from a shamefull end.  
For having the chief iudge solicited  
With bribes, from iustice him he quite misled ; 1456  
Who when he should pronounce<sup>1</sup> his condemnation,  
Instead therof gave him his approbation,  
Vowing there was good reason him to clear,  
'Cause 40 angels did to him appear, 1460  
Which spake him guiltlesse. O,<sup>2</sup> rare vision,  
And admirable golden apparition,

<sup>1</sup> MS. of *pronounce*, with *h*, and a partially-formed *a*  
crossed out, between the two words.

<sup>2</sup> MS. *ô*.

That had the power to make good such evill,  
And turne a demigod into a devill ! 1464

Turnus his enemy would faine supplant,  
Yet how to doe it iustly, cause doth want.  
His Machiavillian<sup>1</sup> pate doth then devise  
To overthrow him by meer forgeries ; 1468

If a man wants  
to supplant his  
enemy

Then saith he is a traiter to his<sup>2</sup> prince,  
And that he can of treason him convince.

Divers seditious wordes are then invented,  
For which he is before the iudge convented ; 1472

he accuses him  
of treason and  
bribes his

But there wants witsse to confirme this lie,—

Tut, they are easily found ; his neighbours by

Are knights o' th' post,<sup>3</sup> and for a litle coine

Will swear what ever he doth them enjo[i]ne. 1476

neighbours  
to give witness  
against him.

Thus arme, he brings to passe his damnd will,

And like a villian guiltlesse blood doth spill.

But he & 's knights o' th' post will post to hell,

That thus their soules vnto damnation sell. 1480

Codrus to his poore cottage had some land,

With which, & with the labour of his hand,

Six litle children & his sickly wife

He did maintaine in such estate of life 1484

The poor man  
with six children  
and a sickly  
wife owns a  
cottage and a bit  
of land ;

As his best meanes could yeild, sufficient

Because they therewithall did live content.

But now Antilegon, his neighbour by,

Because the ground did lye commodiously 1488

but his rich  
neighbour  
wants it for a  
garden.

For his owne vse to make a garden plot,

Hath encroacht all & sure possession got,

Which he maintaines by force. Poor Codrus is

Constrained to sue *sub formâ pauperis*, 1492

(As wanting friends & mony) to regaine

What is his owne. T' other doth entertaine

The best of counsell, & his golde 'gainst lawes

O're throwes the poor man in his rightfull cause ; 1496

With the best of  
counsel and gold  
he gains his end,

<sup>1</sup> Machiavelli died 1527.

<sup>2</sup> to his repeated in MS.

<sup>3</sup> Professional perjurers, &c.

and the poor man  
is undone.

Who with his family are quite vndone,  
Through this vnjust & damnd oppression.

[leaf 19]

Thus Iustice eyes closde vp in golden sleep,  
The ravenous wolfe eats vp the harmlesse sheep. 1500  
Thou wicked Ahab, *which* hast got possession  
By such iniurious transgression,

If God punishes  
those who have  
no compassion  
upon the poor,

Think that if God inflict damnation  
On them that doe not take compassion 1504

Of their poore bretheren, & their wants relieve,  
What will he doe to thee, *which* seekst to grieve  
With an oppressours hand the innocent!

Being not only not to give content, 1508

But even to take away by cursed wrong  
All that in right doth to the poore belong?

He will most  
severely punish  
those who oppress  
them,

Vnlesse thou doe due restitution make,  
And to a better life thy selfe betake; 1512

Vnlesse repentance purchase grace from Iove  
And his iust iudgements from thee quite remooue,

especially unjust  
judges.

Surely the Lord (*which* doth such sinne detest)  
With horrid tormentes will thy soule invest. 1516

And you, *which* should true equity dispense,

Yet bear a gold-corrupted conscience,  
Looke for some plague vpon your heades to light,  
That suffer rich wrong to oppresse poore right. 1520

All lawyers are  
not guilty of this  
sin,

All lawyers I cannot heerof accuse,  
For some there are that doe a conscience vse  
In their profession. This our land containes  
Some in whose heart devine Astræa raignes. 1524

To these, whose vertue keeps our land in peace,

and I wish all  
prosperity to the  
impartial.

I wish all good, all happines encrease.  
Go forward then, and with impartiall handes  
Hold Iustice ballance in faire Albians landes. 1528

Olde greedy minded Pandarus hath a paire  
Of daughters whom the world reputeth faire,  
And faire indeed they are to outward eyes,  
*Which* not discerne inward deformities; 1532

These, for the purchase of a litle golde,

By the olde miser vnto lust are solde.

This slave will even vs her his disgrace,

Bringing his daughters vnto any place

1536

Which is appointed to commerce with sinne,

And himselfe keep the dore, whilst that within

The shamlesse strumpetes are with lust defilde,

Having the gallants of their golde beguilde.

1540

Impious villaine! to defame the fruit

Of thine owne loynes, & basely prostitute

Thy childrens body to such luxurie,

Whom with paternall care & industrie

1544

Thou shouldst traine vp in vertuous education,

For want whereof their horrid imprecation

Will light vpon thy soule, &, which is worse,

Gods fearfull plagues<sup>1</sup> second thy childrens curse.

1548

Me thinkes the hellish & mad lunacy<sup>2</sup>

Of them that doe commit apostacie

For gold, might well a Christian heart affright

Only to hear another but recite

1552

So damnd a sinne; yet every day their fall

In these relapses diabolicall

Many, too many,—Christians shall I name them?

Ah, noe! their actions otherwise defame them.

1556

Some have tur[n]d Turkes for gaine, yet live despise

After they once have been but circumcise.

Base slaves, which Dagon 'bove the Arcke doe set,

And for true Christ adore false Mahomet.

1560

But Mahomet, as Dagon did, shall fall,

And all those wicked priests that worship Baal.

Others, that would to high preferment come,

Leave vs, & flie vnto the Sea of Rome.

1564

But how dost prosper with them being there?

Pandarus sells  
his two daughters  
for gold,

and keeps the  
door while their  
gallants are  
within.

[leaf 19, back]  
In the end his  
children will  
curse him.

Those who  
apostatize for  
gold are many.

Shall I call them  
Christians?

Some join the  
Church of Rome,

<sup>1</sup> This word twice written : *plages*; the letter over the *l* is uncertain. This is crossed through and *plagues* written, but here the first *u* is blurred.

<sup>2</sup> MS. lunary. See Glossary.



- Contemptibly they live, & full of feare.  
 Is ther some damned enterprise in hand,  
 To murder princes, ruinate a land? 1568  
 These be the men that must be actors in it,  
 Who ever were the author to beginne it.  
 If they refuse, 'tis death; if they proceed  
 Death & damnation waites vpon their deed. 1572  
 Thus chaine[d] in wre[t]ched servitude, doth live  
 A runagate, & English fugitive;  
 And yet like fooles, they doe submit their necke  
 Vnto the slavish yoke & proudest checke 1576  
 Of Romes insulting tyrant, vpon hope  
 That their demerits will win larger scope;  
 Many which theither dayly flocke apace  
 To worke their owne confusion & disgrace 1580  
 Witnesse their fearfull endes & wre[t]ched lives:  
 "But goe they must because the devill drives."  
 "Needs must when the devill drives,"  
 Carrier of late would have made his career 1584  
 (Thinking perhaps to be esteemed dear  
 Of th' antichristian prelate) to the citty  
 Of seven hilled Rome, "O, &," say some, "'twas pittie  
 That his (how e're they grant it lewd) intent  
 Met not a look't for prosperous event. 1588  
 For he, because his learning<sup>1</sup> was not small,  
 Might in short time have been a Cardinall."  
 What the successe had prov'd I dare not say,  
 For he was cut of from his wish'd prey; 1592  
 High Iove incensd that thus he should backslide  
 Stroke him, & in a neighbour land he died.  
 Some think he was not Apostolicall,  
 But alwaies in his heart papisticall; 1596  
 Certaine it is, how e're they can excuse him,  
 The devill in this act did but abuse him.  
 And were he not apostate in his flight,  
 In his stay heer he was an hypocrite. 1600

and are employed  
to murder  
princes.

Like fools they  
submit their  
necks to the  
yoke of the  
Pope.

"Needs must  
when the devil  
drives."

If Carrier, who  
died (P at Liege)  
before midsum-  
mer, 1614,

had succeeded in  
reaching Rome,  
he might have  
become a  
Cardinal.

[leaf 20]

He was either an  
apostate or a  
hypocrite.

<sup>1</sup> MS. *learning*.

Pistor was falln into great poverty,  
 How come he to grow rich thus sodenly?  
 For' he of late hath matchd his daughter well  
 Vnto a gentleman, as I hear tell, 1604  
 Of faire demeanes, & great extent of ground,  
 And made her portion worth five thousand pound.  
 Why, once within these five year (as was thought)  
 Ten poundes would all *the* wealth he had have bought,  
 And now he 's in his *thousandes*! This quick change,  
 This sodaine metamorphosis is strange.  
 Belike he hath found out some mine of golde,  
 Or else *the* Fairies bring him heapes vntolde 1612  
 Because he sweeps his house cleane, sets a light,  
 Faire water in a basen, every night,  
 And other pretty toyes, to doe them pleasure;  
 Or else some spirit shewes him hidden treasure. 1616  
 O now you hitt it, 'twas indeed a spirit,  
 To whom, for certaine tearme of yeares t' inherit  
 His ease and pleasure with abundant wealth,  
 He hath made sale of his soules dearest health. 1620  
 And in a deed engrost, signd with his blood,  
 Sould soule & body with all hope of good  
 In heavenly ioyes to come, vnto the devill.  
 O horrid act! O execrable evill! 1624  
 Another Faustus, haplesse, hopelesse man,  
 What wilt thou doe, when as that litle sand  
 Of thy soone emptied houre glasse, is spent?  
 When horrour of thy conscience keeps repent 1628  
 From thy black spotted soule? O (but in vaine)  
 Thou wilt then wish (& think it ease, not paine)  
 "That I had that estate of grace I solde  
 [For the] fruition of a litle golde. 1632  
 Thoug[h] I liv'de ne're soe miserablie poore,  
 And like an abject begd at every doore  
 Millions of yeares, I could be well content

Pistor, who was  
 poor, matches his  
 daughter with a  
 rich man.

Perhaps the  
 Fairies bring  
 him gold, perhaps  
 a spirit.

He has signed a  
 contract with the  
 devil.

What will he do  
 in the end?

He will be  
 willing to be a  
 beggar if he can

<sup>1</sup> Originally *Why*: *For* written over.

thereby escape  
hell.

To 'scape the everlasting punnishment 1636  
Of hells infernall lake, & purchase heaven,  
Of *which* for ever I am now bereaven."  
Then wilt thou curse thy selfe, thy wretched fate,  
The wombe that bare thee, him that thee begat ; 1640  
Wish thou hadst been a beast, a sencelesse stone,  
To 'scape that horroure of confusion.

He will curse all  
men, but in vain.

But wishes, vowes, & horrid execration  
Cannot preserve thee from damnation. 1644

So every honour  
is bought and  
sold : let buyers  
and sellers  
beware.

Thus each thing of esteem is bought and solde  
For mindes-corrupting, soules-confounding golde.  
Sellers take heed, & byers have a care,  
This is no common ordinary ware ! 1648

[leaf 20, back]

Looke to 't betimes, lest you to late repent  
The poore mans curse, earths plague, hells punnishment !

## Sat[ira] 5.

[AGAINST GLUTTONY, DRUNKENNESS, AND TOBACCO.]

## ARGUMENTUM.

Nobiscum in terris Epicuri vivitur instar  
 Delitijs : ventri mille placere modi.  
 Turpior ebrietas animam cum corpore foedat,  
 Et demum ad Stygias ducit vtrumque domos.

From thirst of wealth & golden villany  
 I now am come to brutish gluttonie,  
 Of *which* my Muse doth almost loath to treat,  
 It is soe base a crime, yet growne soe great  
 In customary action, that 'tis deemd  
 If sinne, a smale one, not to be esteemd.  
 This vice doth not alone it selfe extend  
 T' *excesse* in meat, but eke doth comprehend  
 That base vnmanly sinne of drunkennesse,  
 Whose worse then worst of brutish beastlinesse  
 Defiles both soule & body, & doth bring  
 Both of them to eternall ruining.  
 This age of men to *that* *excesse* is growne  
 That was I think in Sodome never knowne,  
 Although it were *that* capitall offence,  
 Which iustly did all-seeing Iove incense  
 Them & their citty vtterly to quell  
 With fire *which* from heavens architecture fell.

I now come to  
 brutish gluttony,  
 which is very  
 common,

1654

and drunkenness,  
 which defiles  
 body and soul.

1658

1662

The present age  
 is worse than  
 Sodome ever was.

1666

- How can we wretches in this sinfull time  
Expect lesse vengeance for as damnd a crime? 1670  
For to speake first of our excesse in meat,  
Though man should eat to live, not live to eate,  
Many there are *which* only vse their care  
In dainty banquetes and delitious farc. 1674
- Many care only  
for what they  
shall eat.
- What beast doth breed in our Britannieke soile  
That doth delight the tast, but we doe toile  
To take & kill? What bird doth cut the aire  
With her swift wing, but that we doe repaire 1678  
Therwith our tables? We doe fish all seas  
To catch *the* rarest dish, therby to please  
Our dainty palates : & yet fish, bests, birdes,  
*Which* in abundance this our land affordes, 1682  
Are not sufficient ; we must have more cates  
From other nations at excessive rates  
To furnish out our table, *which* (like swine  
That eat the fruit, but ne're cast vp their eyen 1686  
To the faire tree) we dayly doe devour  
Without thankesgiving to that heavenly power,  
Whose gracious goodnesse doth such blessings give,  
And suffers vs so peaceably to live 1690  
In such a land of plenty that doth flow  
With milck & hony, *which* we doe bestow  
To pamper our selves & please our sence  
Like Epicures ; as if alone from thence 1694  
We had our being, & vnto that end,  
The cause of our creation, did intend.  
Thus are the guiftes,<sup>1</sup> wherwith God man doth blesse,  
Abusd'e by vaine & riotus excesse. 1698  
Like the rich gluttons in the Gospell are  
The feastes we make, from *which* we doe debarre  
The poorer sort of men. Well may they lie  
Before our dores, & crave our charity ; 1702  
But with poore Lazarus they shall obtaine
- Every beast, bird,  
and fish is  
captured for  
their tables,
- and yet they  
must have  
delicacies from  
other nations.
- [leaf 21]  
We pamper  
ourselves, and  
live like epicures,
- without regarding  
the poor who  
crave charity at  
our doors.

<sup>1</sup> MS. guistes.

Cold comfort, & small reliefe to sustaine  
 Their hunger-starvèd bodies, while within  
 The richer sort doe stand vp to the chin  
 In delicates, & euen with excesse,

1706 The rich over-  
 feed themselves,

Are like to surfet ; while the wantonnesse  
 Of their insatiate appetite, that feeds

On such plurality of viands, breeds

1710

Offensive humors. This I thinke the cause

Which our rich men to such diseases drawes,

Wherewith we dayly see they are tormented,

When if with moderate fare they were contented

and draw on  
 themselves many  
 of the diseases  
 from which they  
 suffer.

They might both keep their bodies in good health,

And save the residue of all their wealth

To feed the hungry soule, the naked cherrish,

Which wanting succour still one heaps doe perish. 1718

But now let me discourse of drunkennes,

Which is a part of gluttony, whose excesse

Is likewise of the belly, & is made

Even a common ordinary trade.

Drunkennes  
 is common.

1722

We count the nation of the German Dutch

The greatest drunkard, but our land as much,

Or rather more, is with this vice infected,

Which doth deserue sharply to be corrected,

1726

And yet 'tis slackly punnishd ; but 'twere good

That Dracoës [laws] for ours in vertue stood.

This vice, I say, with vs as frequent is

As with the Dutchmen, who, if I not misse

Mine aime, were the first founders of this sinne

Within our country ; but we now beginne

T' appropriate to our selves their noted vice,

So apt we are to follow each devise

1734

That tendes to wickednesse & villany ;

After forbidden things we swiftly flie,

When after that from which much good may growe,

Although by force compeld, we slowly goe.

1738

But man must follow the times fashion,

but we quickly  
 imitated and now  
 often excel them.

And shew himselfe an ape in imitation  
Of every new found & hell-hatched sinne  
Or else he is not counted worth a pinne. 1742

[leaf 21, back]  
A man who  
cannot sit and  
drink all day  
is made a jest.

He that cannot sit quaffing all the day,  
Carousing healths till wit & wealth decay;  
Which will not vpon every lewd request  
Drink drunk in kindenesse, why, he's made a jest 1746

The drunkard  
sits and makes  
base speeches.

To those companions, whose licentious veine  
And drunken humours still doe entertaine  
The basest speeches, & in their mad fit  
Doe speake at randome without fear or wit. 1750

The Lacedæmo-  
nians used to  
make their  
slaves drunk as  
a warning to  
their children.

How far vnlike Lacedemonians,  
Though they were hethen & we Christians,  
Are men in this our age? To them this crime  
Soe loathsome was, that they would finde a time 1754

To make *the* Helottes drunk, which wer their slaves,  
A sort of loutish, abject-minded knaves;  
And being in the basest sort disguise,  
Shew them their children, mock them as despise 1758

And debaush creatures, by their beastlynesse,  
To teach their young to loath all drunkennesse.  
But if others will not doe it for vs  
Will<sup>1</sup> even fox *ourselves* till all abhorre vs. 1762

Well may it fit this our vntemperate age,  
To shew a drunkard in his equipage.

I pass over the  
man who had a  
thousand dishes  
at one feast,

I'le passe Apitius, which spent all the year,  
In brave carousing, & fine belly-cheer; 1766

He that to please his sence had at one feast  
His thousand severall dishes at the least,  
Although he had noe other company  
But his sole single selfe to satisfie; 1770

and by his  
extravagance

For all *the* flesh that Noahs Arke contained,  
The whole seas fish, if he had entertained  
His friends, could not sufficient store afforde,  
To furnish out th' insatiate gluttons borde. 1774

<sup>1</sup> ? We'll.

Thus he run one, till on[e] yeares gluttony

Brought him from millions vnto poverty :

I will omit the brave Ægyptian Dame,

Which by her death hath got eternall fame,

Proud Cleopatra, Anthonies loose minion,

Who, to obtaine her lovers good opinion,

Did in a cup of wine, drunk to his health,

Carouse dissolvèd pearles of infinite wealth ;

Her great excesse & sensuall gluttony

Procurde her owne & his sad tragedie.

I 'le leave th' Assirian Sardanapalus,

With that lewd Roman, Heliogabolus ;

Only their riot was the fatall knife

That cut them of from empire & from life.

Examples from soe farre I need not fetch,

We have more moderne ones within our reach ;

In this our native Isle, each day, each hower

Millions of such like subiects doe ever shower

Before our eyes, *which* live in vaine excesse

Of soule-polluting, beastly drunkennesse.

On[e] pot companion & his fashion

I will describe, & make relation

Of what my selfe have seene, that they that hear it

May hate the like, & hating may forbear it.

Cervisius is a most accomlisht man,

Whether he deale at halfe pot or whole can,

No flincher, but as true a drunkard bred

As ever lifted cup vnto his head.

A right good fellow, a true ioviall boy,

And on[e] that of his purse is nothing coy ;

Hee 'l spend his dozen of beer with any friend,

And fox him if he can, before hee 'l end ;

I, or hee 'l fox himselfe, but that 's no wonder

The fox & he are seldome time a sunder.

But if the man, to sobernesse inclinde,

Refuse to follow his inordinate minde,

brought himself  
to poverty.

1778

Cleopatra, to gain  
her lover's good  
opinion, drank  
dissolved pearls.

1782

1786

Sardanapalus  
lost his life not  
through such  
means

1790

as millions in our  
own country now  
(leaf 221  
practise.

1794

1798

Cervisius is a  
true drunkard

1802

and a right good  
fellow,

1806

1810

but if a man  
declines to drink  
with him he is



ready to compel  
him.

Because his nature cannot brooke to doe it,  
His stab is ready to compel him to it.  
This alehouse-haunter thinkes himselfe a safe

He drinks with  
his companions  
and makes them  
drink with him,

If he with his companions, George & Rafe, 1814  
Doe meet together to drink vpsfreese

Till they have made themselves as wise as geese.  
O ther this man (like lord within a hutch)

Will pay for all & ne're his mony grutch ; 1818

Th[e]y must not part till they have drunk a barrell,

or else he will  
quarrel with  
them.

Or straight this royster will begin to quarrell.

Wher e're they meet, to th' alehouse they must goe,  
He swears they shall, & they must not say noe. 1822  
As soone as e're the alehouse them receives.

The tapster, duple diligent, straight leaves  
His other gwestes, in course to take his cup,  
And make the full messe of these drunkards vp ; 1826

As it is sweetest  
drinking at the  
spring, they go  
into the cellar

He knowes what best belongs vnto his gaine,

These are the men he seekes to entertaine.

Then straight into the seller hee 'I them bring,—

'Tis sweetest drinking at the verry spring,— 1830

Wher as a barrell, for the nonce set out,  
Must straight be pearc'd, then each must haue his bout  
And drink vp all ; to leave a litle snuffe

Is petty treason ; & such pretious stuffe 1834

and drink till  
their hands shake  
and their heads  
are addled.

Must not be throwne away. Thus they drink round,

Vntill their adle heads doe make the ground  
Seeme blew vnto them ; till their hands doe shake,  
Their tongues speak dublè, & their braines do ake. 1838

But they proceed till one drop[s] downe dead drunke,  
Wher he doth lie long time, a sencelesse trunk ;

And all the rest in a sweet pickle brought  
(Such operation hath the barrell wrought), 1842

[leaf 22, back]  
One falls dead  
drunk, a second  
goes to sleep,  
the third is sick,

Lie downe beside him. One straight falles a sleep

Ready to drowne himselfe, in that doth keep

The broken beer from spoiling ; then another

Falles into spuing, & is like to smother 1846

Himselſe in his owne vomit. He that leaſt  
 Seemes to be drunk, yet ſhewes himſelſe a beaſt,  
 And that 's the tapſter, *which* hath got a tricke,  
 Becauſe he would prevent his being ſick, 1850  
 To force himſelſe to caſt, then on the barrell  
 To take a nap. Thus ends this drinking quarrell.  
 After ſome 3 howers ſleepeſ ſtrong operation  
 Hath brought their braines into a better faſhion, 1854  
 They gin to wake, & finding themſelſes ill  
 Of their late ſurfet, *which* hath force to kill  
 The ſtrongeſt body, to 't aſreſh they goe,  
 To drink away their paine ; ſuch heartſick woe 1858  
 By an immoderate drunkenneſſe procure,  
 Muſt by "a haire of the ſame dog" be curde.  
 Then once againe the pot muſt keep his round,  
 Vntill the barrell, with his hollow ſound, 1862  
 Fortell his emptinneſſe. Trivmphantly  
 They doe then eccho forth this victory,  
 As 'twere a conqueſt, that deſerv'd with golde  
 In Fames eternall booke to be enrolde. 1866  
 But ſtill Cerviciuſ paies for all, his purſe  
 Defraies all recknings ; there muſt none diſburſe  
 A penny but himſelſe. "Tut, I have landes  
 Which now of late are come into my handes, 1870  
 And whiſt they laſt, I will not want good drink,  
 Nor boon companions. Wherefore was my chinck  
 Made but to ſpend ? And can 't be better ſpent  
 Then 'mongſt good laddes in ioviall meriment ? 1874  
 Faith, no. Flie, brasse ! More precious I do holde  
 Maltes pure quinteſſence then king Harries golde.  
 Good liquor breeds good blood, good blood beſt health,  
 And that 's a iewell to be priſde 'bove wealth. 1878  
 Drink round, ſweet George, to me, my turne is next,  
 And I'll charge honeſt Rafe ; let's ply our text  
 Without digreſſion. Tapſter, take your bout,  
 Leave not a drop, you'r beſt, but drink all out. 1882

while the tapſter  
 vomits and goes  
 to ſleep on the  
 barrel.

Three hours later  
 they all wake and  
 go to it again till  
 the barrel is  
 empty,

becauſe "a haire  
 of the ſame dog"  
 muſt cure them.

Cerviciuſ pays  
 for all;

ſo long as he has  
 money he will  
 not want good  
 drink,

which breeds  
 good blood, and  
 good blood beſt  
 health.

He thinks the  
four would beat  
any four in  
Europe.

Why soe, brave boyes, this gear doth cotten well,  
I think we foure might win *the* silver bell  
Of any 4 in Europe, for *our* drink.  
Let 's make a challenge, Rafe ; I doe not think 1886  
But we shall put downe all that dare contest  
With vs in this, if we but doe *our* best.  
And yet ther were 4 roring boyes, they say,  
That drunk a hogshead dry in one poor day. 1890  
Tapster, some beer ; the conceit makes me dry !  
Heer honest rogue, night partes good cumpany ;  
But my good lades, let 's meet againe to morrow,  
And at this fountaine we will drinke downe sorrowe."

This conceit  
makes him dry,  
and he drinks  
hoping to meet  
again next day.

[leaf 23]

Thus he runs on his course, til 's drunken vaine  
Ruines his substance, makes him entertaine  
For his companion penurious want.—  
All other friends doe then wax wondrous scant ; 1898  
But this alone, when men fall in decay,  
Will never leave them till their dying day.  
His substance poore, his soule more poore in grace,  
Getes him contempt on earth, in hell a place 1902  
Of everlasting paine, vnlesse the smart  
Of misery reforme his wicked heart.  
For sometimes want & hard calamity  
Even Athiestes turnes to Christianity. 1906

Another scorns  
to get drunk on  
beer or bottled-  
ale.

But Bacchanall is of a higher straine,  
He scornes soe base a thought to entertaine,  
As to drink drunk with beer or botle-ale ;  
Noe, he contemnes the vse, that fashion 's stale. 1910  
Marry, your true elixar, all rare wine,  
That doth enspire, & make the thoughtes divine !  
Whie, he esteemes the nectar of the goddes,  
Homers Nepenthe, to come short by oddes 1914  
Of [this] delicious iuice. Rich Malago,  
Canarie, Sherry, with brave Charnico ;  
Phalerno, with your richest Orleance wine,  
Pure Rhenish, Hippocras, white Muscadine, 1918

Nepenthe to him  
falls far short of  
delicious wine,

- With the true bloud of Bacchus, Allegant,  
 That addes new vigour *which* the backe doth want  
 Are precious wines. Marrie, your white or Charret  
 Is but so so; he cares not greatly for it; 1922  
 But for the rest, whose vertuous operation  
 Doth cheer the heart opprest with passion,  
 Doth rapsodize the soules intelligence  
 Above the leuell of inferiour sence, 1926  
 Why, had he to his wish the cranes long necke  
 To tast with more delight, he would not wrecke  
 Of all celestially ioyes; this were a treasure  
 To be preferd above that heavenly pleasure. 1930  
 From thine owne mouth, thou beastly Epicure,  
 Dost thou condemne thy selfe, thou shalt be sure  
 Never indeed to tast celestially bliss!  
 But know withall (though thou those joyes doe misse)  
 That thou (when as thy soule will be agast) 1935  
 Shalt of the cup of Godes iust vengeance tast!  
 Fower kinde of drunkardes this our age hath quoted,  
 Which, since by observation I have noted, 1938  
 It shall not be amisse heer to insert,  
 That we may know how much each doth pervert  
 The soule of man. The first is merry drunk,  
 And this, although his braines be somewhat shrunk  
 I' th' wetting, hath, they say, but litle hart 1943  
 In his demeanour; to make harmles sport  
 Is all his practise. In what fashion?  
 Is baudie talke, & damnd prophanation 1946  
 Of Godes most holy name, a harmlesse thing?  
 Are apish tricks & toies, *which* vse to bring  
 Men in dirision, sportes to breed delight?  
 Is that *which* makes the soule as black as night, 1950  
 Which takes away the perfect vse of sence,  
 Which is the high way to incontinence,  
 A thing of nothing? Whie, if this be soe,  
 I graunt you then a drunken sot may goe 1954

and claret is but  
 "so-so."

Wines cheer the  
 heart and elevate  
 the senses.

If Bacchanal had  
 but the neck of a  
 crane, to taste  
 with more  
 delight!

There are four  
 kinds of  
 drunkards:

1. The merry  
 drunk: his sport  
 is called  
 harmless;

[leaf 23, back]

but bawdy talk  
 and apish tricks  
 are not harmless.

For one that is innocuous ; otherwise  
 He is a beast & worse, let that suffice.  
 And if this be the hurtlesse sport you meant,  
 Iove keepe me from such harmlesse merriment. 1958

2. The maudlin  
 drunk, whose  
 drink seems to  
 fall from his eyes.

The second kinde we maudline drunkardes call.

I thinke the humid stuffe they drink doth fall  
 Out of their eyes againe, for they distill

Women can cry  
 when they will,

Teares in great plenty. Woemen when they will 1962

Can weep, we say, but these doe never cry  
 Except they first be drunk ; but then they dry  
 The fountaine of their teares quite vp before

but he only when  
 he's drunk.

They cease from weeping, or doe once give o're 1966

Their dolefull lamentation. I suppose  
 The name of "Maudline drunk" from hence arose.

This kinde of drunkard is the kindest creature  
 That ever did converse with mortall nature ; 1970

When he is in his fit, you may commiaund  
 All that he has, his purse, his heart, his hand,  
 To do you service ; why hee'l ever kill

If you'll sit and  
 swill with him  
 he's happy.

Your heart with kindenesse, soe you'l sit & swill 1974

In his loathd presence ; keep him company  
 And he is pleasde, ther's his felicity.

And now I call to minde an accident  
 That did befall to one of his lewd bent, 1978  
 One of these maudline drunkards (I will passe  
 Over it briefly). In this sort it was :

Once a wealthy  
 young gentleman

A certain wealthy-left young gentleman,  
 One that had more skill how to quaffe a can 1982

Then manage his revenewes, for his ease

let out his land  
 to a crafty old  
 fox,

Put out the best part of his land to lease,

And had to tennant an olde crafty fox,

who knew on  
 which side his  
 bread was  
 buttered.

Who, though his landlord made him a right ox, 1986

Knewe for all that on which side of his bread

The sweetnesse of the butter was yspread ;

Knew how to turn all to his best of gaine,

And therefore did with patience entertaine 1990

- His supposde wrong. What cannot thirst of golde  
 Performe when men to wickednesse are solde?  
 This old sinckanter, when he came to pay  
 His landlordes rent at the appointed day, 1994 When he came  
to pay his rent he  
 Was for the most part sure to finde him fast  
 Within a taverne; whilst his coine did last  
 Ther was his randevous. The mony tolde,  
 Which was as welcome vnto him as golde, 1998 always found his  
landlord at the  
tavern,  
 They needs must drink together ere they part.  
 Then is wine cal'd for, & quart after quart  
 Comes marching in, till my young gallant fals  
 Into his maudline fit, & then he calles 2002 [leaf 24]  
 Afresh for wine, & with right weeping eyes  
 Hugging his tennant, "You are welcome!" cryes,  
 "In faith you are, be God you are! Beleeve it,  
 What is it thou wilt have & I will give it. 2006 where he was  
welcomed and  
treated,  
 Sha't have a new lease for a hundred yeares,  
 Of all the land thou holdst!—I speake in teares  
 Of my affection,—& shalt yearly pay  
 A peppercorne, a nutt, a bunch of may, 2010 and offered his  
land at a pepper-  
corn rent  
 Or some such trifle. Tut, man! I desire  
 To have thee thrive,—I only doe aspire  
 To purchase credit; thou the gaine shalt reap;—  
 Hang him that will not let his landes good cheap!" 2018 by his maudlin  
drunk landlord.  
 Well, for this time they part. Next quarter comes,  
 And after that a third; he payes the summes,  
 And findes his landlord in this humouze still.  
 Then doth the crafty fox begin to fill 2018  
 His braines with cunning; if his plotes doe hit  
 To his desire, his landlordes want of wit  
 Shall make him rich for ever. Vpon this  
 He makes a feast to which he doth not misse 2022 This time they  
part, but before  
they meet again  
he prepares  
indentures.  
 To invite his landlord; but before, compacted  
 With an attorney by whose heale directed,  
 A paire of large indentures, fairely drawne,  
 Are formally composite. These as a pawne 2026  
 TIME'S W. 5

Of his deer hopes he keeps, & when the fit  
 Hath quite deprive my gallant of his wit,  
 Hee 'l make his landlord set both hand & seale  
 To this new lease. Men of experience deale 2030  
 To their best profit; & it were as good  
 That he should be a gainer as the brood  
 Of cut-throat vintners. Well, to make short worke,  
 My gentleman, his braines as light as corke 2034  
 With brave carousing, fals to his odd vaine  
 Of weeping kindenesse; nay, seemes to complaine  
 That his kinde offer findes noe acceptation!  
 Olde Gray-beard knowes his cue, & by gradation 2038  
 Still drawes him one, till the kinde foole protestes  
 Were the indentures drawne, so firme he restes  
 In his opinion, ther should be a match,  
 And his hand soone should all the rest despatch. 2042  
 Straight vpon this are the indentures brought;  
 Witnesse there needs not, for the house<sup>1</sup> is fraught  
 With store [of] gues<sup>t</sup>es; then the kinde harted gull  
 Seales and subscribes to all: his wits are dull 2046  
 And sencelesse of this wrong. Thus is he<sup>2</sup> shorne  
 Of eight score poundes a year for one poore corne  
 Of pepper, & the lease, that hath noe flawe,  
 For a whole hundred yeares is good in lawe. 2050  
 But now to passe this & to make reporte  
 Of lyon-drunkardes, which is the third sorte.  
 Your lyon-drunkard is a kinde of man  
 That in his fitt will rage, sweare, curse, & banne, 2054  
 Break glasses, & throw pottes against the wall,  
 Quarrell with any man, & fight with all  
 That yield not to his rage. Mad Hercules,  
 In the extreamest rage of his disease, 2058  
 Clad in the shirt which Deianira sent,  
 Dipt in the blood of Nessus, to prevent

Men act for their  
 own advantage.

The landlord  
 complains that  
 his offer is not  
 accepted.

Then the in-  
 denture is pro-  
 duced and signed,  
 and he is robbed.

[leaf 24, back]

8. "Lion-drunk-  
 ards" come next.

They are far  
 worse than  
 Hercules.

<sup>1</sup> A letter like *O* is written before the word *house*.

<sup>2</sup> MS. this is the

- His love to Iöle, when the poyson boyld  
 In every veine, & with the torment spoilde  
 And quite bereaft him of true reasons vse,  
 Making him teare vp trees, & break all truce  
 With man & beast, was not yet halfe soe madde  
 As this outrageous drunkard, nor soe bad 2062 This drunkard  
 T' encounter with; for this man is indeed is worse than  
 Worse then a mad man. Let that man take heed a madman.
- Which comes within his reach; vnlesse he have  
 More lives then one, this wretch will dig his grave.  
 These are *the* men *that* make soe many fraies, 2071 These are they  
 That stab & kill soe many now adayes, who commit so  
 On whom just vengeance oftentimes attendes, many murders.
- Bringing their lives vnto most shamefull endes. 2074  
 The fowerth & last kinde of this drunken crewe  
 Is beastly drunk, & these men vse to spue,  
 Lying in gutters, & in filthy mire, 4. The beastly  
 More like to swine then men. Promethean fire 2078 drunk, who lie in  
 Is quite extinct in them; yea, vse of sence gutters like  
 Hath within them noe place of residence. swine.
- Some of this kinde, as if a deadly potion  
 Had wrought th' effect, doe seeme to have no motion  
 Of vitall faculties; a man would deeme 2083  
 That they were dead indeed, for soe they seeme,  
 When only superfluity of drink They are dead  
 Deceives the eye, & makes *the* heart misthink. 2086 drunk.
- On[e] of these men (I am about to tell  
 Noe fable, reader, therfore marke it well)  
 Vpon mine owne moste true intelligence,  
 Being dead drunk i' th' time of pestilence, 2090 One of these was  
 Was thought t' have dide o' th' plague, & seeming dead, missed during  
 Was amongst others alive buried. the pestilence  
 But being by some of his companions mist, which raged in  
 And diligent enquirie made, they wist 2094 1603. [See Defoe's  
 At length what was become of him, & went *History of the*  
 Vnto his place of buriall, with intent *Plague of 1665*, p.  
 68, ed. Bohn.]



- If it were possible to save his life.  
 He had been buried alive. The grave digd vp, they saw with how great strife 2098  
 The drunken man, to wonted sence restorde,  
 Had vsde himselfe, being all with blood begorde  
 [leaf 25] With violence to help himselfe was wrought,  
 But all in vaine ; for not the aide they brought, 2102  
 Which came too late, nor his owne power, could shend  
 This wretched man from a moste fearfull end.  
 This serves as an example of God's hatred of this sin. Surely this iust example doth expresse,  
 How much God hates this beastly wickednesse. 2106  
 Yet sinfull man, whose very heart should bleed  
 With recordation of soe straunge a deed,  
 Is not reformd a iot from this lewd sinne,  
 But every day more deeply plunged in. 2110  
 Nay, drunkennesse hath got an arch-defender,  
 Yea, more then that, a principall commander,  
 A great phisitian, which prescribes some dayes  
 But a certain physician says it is necessary to drink. Wherin 'tis necessary, as he saies, 2114  
 To drink drunk for the bodies better health,  
 And being done in private & by stealth,  
 It is a thing of nothing ! What phisitian,  
 Whose vertuous minde, religious condition, 2118  
 Speak him a Christian, would once entertaine  
 Soe vilde a thought, or such a lye maintaine ?  
 He must be an atheist or an Epicure. It is some at[h]eist sure, vpon my life,  
 Some Epicure, for 'mongst such men ar[e] rife 2122  
 These damnd opinions ; on[e] that knowes noe God,  
 Was neuer scourged with afflictions rod,  
 And therfore luld a sleep in pleasures lap,  
 Securely sinnes, & feares no after-clap. 2126  
 This man, which only setteth vp his rest  
 In that which man communicates with beast,  
 The soule of sence, denies th' eternity  
 Of th' intellectual part, & doth apply 2130  
 All his endevours to delight the sence ;  
 Noe marle though he with drunkennesse dispence,

Which, though it may the bodies health secure,  
The soules continuall death it doth procure. 2134

Old Monsier Gray-beard with your poynts vntrust, Old Gray-beard  
Dublet vnbuttond, ready for your lust; who hangs his  
You, *which the* chamber wher you lay your head chamber with  
With baudie pictures round about doe spread; 2138 bawdy pictures,

Which make your maide daunce naked to your eyes,

Only to see her veines & arteries;

Which hast given out this foolish prophesie,

That, vnlesse throught to death, thou ne're shalt die; thinks he will  
And therefore neither vnto church nor faire, 2143 only die by being  
Nor any publicke meeting darst repaire, throught.

But idlie livest at home in ease, secure,

A very atheist, & meer Epicure, 2146

This is your axiome, "drunkennesse is good

To clear the stomach, & to purge the blood."

He too thinks  
drunkenness good  
sometimes.

Well maist thou be a good phisitian

But I am<sup>1</sup> certaine a bad Christian. 2150

After *the* killing of some hundred men,

[leaf 25, back]

And yet I scarcely reckon one for ten,

To trie the working of thy minerals,

Thy hearbes, thy drugges & such materials,

2154 In his experi-  
ments to test his  
drugs he has  
killed many.

Perhaps some litle knowledge thou hast gaind

To ease the head or stomach, being painde;

To help an ague-shaken bodie, cure

A fever, dropsie, gout, or cicature;

2158

All this, & more then this, as farre as nature

Permites thy skill to healp a mortall creature,

Suppose thou canst performe; graunt thou couldst give

To a dead body force againe to live, 2162

As poetes faine that Æsculapious

Did to vnjustly slaine Hypolitus;

Yet all thy skill wherof thou makst thy vaunt

Is nothing worth, because thou standst in want 2166

Though he has  
learned some-  
thing, yet,  
ignorant of his  
soul, his learning  
is useless.

Of the true knowledge of thy soules salvation,

<sup>1</sup> Not unlike *ar* in MS.

- The sweetnesse of whose only contemplation,  
 The vertue of thy art doe passe, as farre  
 As bright Apollo doth the meanest starre. 2170  
*Which if thou knewst, it would thee quickly teach*  
 Another lesson, far above thy reach  
 Of principles in phisick:<sup>1</sup>—that noe evill  
 (*Which had it's first begin[in]g from the devill*) 2174  
 Though good ensue therby, must be committed,  
 Yea though the ill with more good be requitted.  
 How much more then soe horrible a crime  
 As drunkennesse, whose putrefactionous slime 2178  
 Darkens the splendour of *our common* wealth,  
 Must not be acted to secure the health  
 Of *the* base body (I doe call it base  
 In reference to the soule), so to deface 2182  
 The purer part of man; yea, by such action,  
 The loathsomnesse of whose infection  
 Makes man, indued with reason, worse then beast;  
 Both soule & body doe become vnblest, 2186  
 Vnsanctified members, & vnlesse  
 Godes grace in time this wickednesse represses,  
 Th' all<sup>2</sup> both together perish, & remaine  
 In hels eternally tormenting paine. 2190
- Besides ale, beer, & sundry sortes of wine  
 From forren nationes, whose more fruitfull vine  
 Yeilds plenty of god Bacchus, we have got  
 Another kinde of drinke, *which* well I wot 2194  
 Is of smale goodnesse, though *our* vaine delight  
 Follow it with excessive appetite;  
 And that's Tobacco, a rare Indian weed,  
 Which, because far fetcht only, doth exceed 2198  
 In vertue all *our* native hearbes,—for what?  
 For many pretious vses, vertues that

We may not do  
 evil that good  
 may come.

Drunkenness  
 darkens the  
 splendour of  
 our country,

and makes man  
 worse than a  
 beast.

Besides ale and  
 wine, we now  
 have Tobacco,

a rare Indian  
 weed of great  
 virtues,

<sup>1</sup> The sense seems to require "*the* reach of principles in phisick," or, "thy reach in principles of phisicke."

<sup>2</sup> MS. *Th'all* for they'll.

May be applide to phisicke? Graunt it soe,

Although I see great reason to say noe;

How can that iustifie our common taking

In such excesse, our even for that forsaking

All other nutrime[n]tes? Doe we applie

Phisick in this sorte? If I should say I,

I should belie my knowledge; phisicks vse

Serv's only to reforme the knowne abuse

Of the distempered body, & must be

But seldome, & with mediocrity,

Applide on speciall causes when they fall;

To take Tobacco thus were phisicall,

And might perhaps doe good; but this excesse

And ordinarie practise, questionlesse,

Annoyes th' internall partes & makes them foule,

But I am sure commaculates the soule.

Yet in these dayes hee's deemd a very gull

That cannot take Tobacco; every skull

And skip-iacke now will have his pipe of smoke,

And whiff it bravely till hee's like to choke.

You shall have a poore snake, whose best of meanes

Is but to live on that he dayly gleanes

By drudgery from others, *which* will spend

His pot of nappy ale vpon his friend,

And his Tobacco with as ioviall grace,

As if he were a lord of some faire place

And great revenewes! "Tut, why should he not?

I hope a man may spend what he hath got,

Without offence to any. What he spendes

Is his owne monie, & among his friendes

He will bestowe it." I, & doe soe still,

Follow the swinge of thy vngoverned will,

See what 'twill bring thee too; for I fore see

Thy end wilbe both shame & beggerie.

Whom have we yonder with a pipe at 's head?

He lookes as if he were true Indian bred.

2202 [leaf 26]  
which, even if  
good in itself,  
cannot justify  
the excessive use  
of it.

2206 Physic is used  
seldom and with  
moderation,

2210

and if tobacco  
were so used it  
might do good.

2214

2218

But now every  
skip-jack must  
have his pipe

2222

and pot of ale.

2226

2230 And why should  
a man not spend  
what is his own?

2234

Fumoso is the  
best of smokers;

O, 'tis Fumoso with the tallow face,  
He that of late hath got a speciall grace, 2238  
And that's to be *the* best Tobacconist  
That ever held a pipe within his fist.

but he has ruined  
himself by the  
practice;

It cost him dear enough; for *the* fame goes  
H'as smokd out all his living at his nose 2242  
To purchase this rare skill. But hee 'l repaire  
This losse with greater wealth vnto a haire,—  
He has the rediest meanes this gap to stop.

he means to regain  
his wealth by  
selling tobacco  
and bottled ale.

"What's that?" Why he intends to keep a shop 2246  
For smoke & bottle-ale, *which* soone will drawe  
Good store of gallantes (even as iet doth strawe)  
Vnto his custome, &, for greater gaine,  
A bonny lasse or two hee 'l entertaine. 2250

[leaf 26, back]

As take me e're a shop subvrbian  
That selles such ware, without a curtezane,  
And we will have the deed cronologizde,  
Nay it may well be now immortalizde. 2254  
Doth a tobacco pipe hang before the dore,

A woman is  
always kept at  
these shops.

'Tis a sure signe within ther is a whore.  
"A whore," sayes he; "O, fie! you speake to broad;  
A punck, or else one of the dealing trade; 2258  
And such a one I mean to keep, & she  
Will help, I hope, to keep & maintaine me.  
O, 'tis the only thriving meanes of all

He will purchase  
riches in  
abundance,

To rayse mans fortunes vp by womans fall." 2262  
An excellent project, follow thy designe,  
And thou shalt purchase a rich golden mine,  
And hell with all to boote;—soe thou hast golde  
It makes noe matter. But perhaps being olde, 2266  
One foote already within Charons bote,  
Thou thinkst it time enough to change thy cote  
To a more Christian habit, if th' intend,  
How vile so e're thy life have been, thine end 2270

but must lose his  
soul in the end.

Shalbe repentant, though thou doe deferre  
To the last minute, yet thou darst aver

'Twill be sufficient. From the theefe o' th' crosse  
 Thou dost example take ; God seekes the losse 2274  
 Of no mans soule ; his Sonne he therfore gave  
 The soules of sinners, soe we are all, to save.

Thou silly sott, how well thou canst invent  
 Against thy selfe to make an argument ! 2278

Faith only can  
 gain a man  
 admission to  
 heaven.

Foole, Foole ! Not every dying man shall enter,  
 That saith "Lord, Lord," into the heavenly center  
 Of everlasting blisse ; true faith must be  
 The only meanes to this eternity. 2282

And how doth that but by good workes appear,  
 Good woorkes are true faiths handmaidens, & are dear  
 In the Almightyes eyes, though (I confesse)

Not of sufficient power to release 2286

and faith shows  
 itself in good  
 works.

The soule from everlasting punnishment  
 (As papistes doe persuade by argument)  
 And purchase heaven. Godes mercy, not deserte  
 Of mortall man, can heavenly ioyes impart. 2290

But to returne to thee which thinkst to die  
 In the true faith, yet livst in villanie ;  
 That makst account to purchase heavenly grace  
 At thy last hower, yet dayly sinst apace ; 2294  
 Presumptuous slave, thy error doth deceive thee,  
 And of those heavenly ioes will quite bereave thee !

They who hope  
 to purchase  
 heaven at the  
 last hour are  
 deceived.

For if the truth thou doe exactly scanne,  
 As is the life, so is the end of man. 2298

Wheras the theefes example thou dost bring,  
 Who being ready, his last requiem sing  
 Vpon the crosse, was in that instant hower  
 From shamefull death to the celestially bower 2302  
 Of Paradise transported ; learne to know

The example of  
 the thief on the  
 Cross was only to

[leaf 27]

That this example was indeed to shew  
 Gods mercy infinite, his power to save,  
 Though man belike to drop into his grave. 2306  
 The vse of this we rightly may applie  
 To comfort them whose huge iniquity

comfort such as

are oppressed  
with sin, and to  
keep them from  
despair. Their conscience doth oppresse, & make them faint,  
Lest black dispaire their guilty soules attain. 2310  
But as this one, so but this only one,  
To keep man from such damnd presumption  
As thou dost fall into, Godes word containes,  
Man's intellect is  
alienated and his  
body dedicated  
to sin. How darst thou then presume? Wher are thy braines?  
How is thy iudgement from truth alienated? 2315  
How is thy soule, *which* should be consecrated  
Vnto Godes service, dedicat to sinne,  
To such presumptuous sinne? If thou shouldst winne  
All thy lives precious time to clear this blot, 2319  
To purge thy conscience of soe foule a spot,  
To wash thy sinne in true repentant teares,  
Nothing that  
man can do will  
appease God's  
wrath. Yet all thy sorrowes, all thy Christian cares 2322  
Are not sufficient to appease Godes wrath.<sup>1</sup>  
Vnlesse his mercy helpe to expiate<sup>1</sup>  
The foulnesse of this crime; without his grace,  
Hell shalbe thy perpetuall dwelling place. 2326

Gluttons, drunk-  
ards, and  
Epicures, And you rich gluttons, drunkardes, Epicures,  
Whom carnall sence & appetite immures  
From God & goodnesse, think not (though you live  
Like beastes) that you noe strict account shall give 2330  
How you have spent your time, consumd'e your treasure,  
Livd' brutishlie in ease, delight, & pleasure.  
Yes, for each act, for every word & thought,  
will appear before  
the Judgment  
Seat of God. Before Godes high tribunal being brought, 2334  
You must all answeare, yet you wilbe mute,  
For your owne conscience will your cause confute.  
Then to your terrour shall that sentence be,  
"Depart ye cursed to helles miserie!" 2338  
But I too long vpon this vice have staide,  
Ther's something else of others to be saide. 2340

<sup>1</sup> So in MS.

## Sat[ira] 6.

[AGAINST LASCIVIOUSNESS.]

## ARGUMENTUM.

*Vndique squalenti scelerata libidine terra  
Affluit, & templis spargitur vsque Venus;  
Luxurians ætas læna, meretrice, cinædo  
Polluitur, mœchos angulus omnis alit.*

Having discoursd of sensuall gluttonie,  
It followes now I speake of venerie;  
For these companions as inseperable  
Are linckt together with sinnes ougly cable; 2344  
The heart of lust's excesse in delicates,  
And in this vice the soule precipitates.  
Lot was first drunk, & in this drunken fit  
He that incestuous sinne did straight committ. 2348  
But I leave recordes of antiquity  
And take me to this times iniquity.  
Lust, as a poyson that infects *the* blood,  
Boyles in the veines of man; the raging floud 2352  
Of Neptunes kingdome, when th' impetuous might  
Of the fierce windes doth make it seem to fight  
With monstrous billowes 'gainst the loftie cloud,  
Is calmer then the sea of lust, though loud 2356  
Vnto the eare of sence, & is more safe;  
For this can only drowne the worser hafe

Excess of  
delicates is the  
heart of lust.

Lot was drunk  
when he sinned.

[leaf 27, back]

Now lust as a  
poison infects the  
blood,



Of man, the bodie ; but lustes ocean  
O'rewhelms both soule & body ; yet fond man 2360  
Runnes in this gulfe of sinne without all stay,  
And wilfully doth cast himselfe away.

and if ever a  
nation were  
defiled it is  
our own.

If ever age or nation with this crime  
Were beastiallie defilde, now is the time, 2364  
And ours that nation, whose libidinous heat,  
Whose fire of brutish lust, is growne soe great  
That it doth threaten with proud Phaeton  
To give the world a new combustion. 2368

Both sexes and  
all ages are given  
to this sin.

Both sexes, each degree, both young & olde,  
Themselves vnto this filthy sinne have solde ;  
Yea, even the tribe of Levie (*which* should be  
The mirrours of vnspotted chastety) 2372  
Are slaves to lust ! I speake not this alone

Popish priests  
are guilty not-  
withstanding  
their vows.

Of Popish priestes, *which* make profession  
Of an immaculate virginity,  
Yet live in whoredome & adultery ; 2376  
But alsoe to our clergie, which to blame,  
Preach continence, but follow not the same.  
And their example's able to seduce  
Well given mindes vnto this knowne abuse ; 2380  
For euery man doth vse in imitation  
To follow his instructours fashion.

One country  
parson keeps  
his whore,

The country parson may, as in a string,  
Lead the whole parish vnto any thing. 2384

Eulalius hath had good education,  
Pens sermons well, hath good pronuntiation,  
Stiffie inueighs 'gainst sinne, as gluttonie,  
Pride, envie, wrath, sloth, brutish lecherie, 2388  
Covetousnes, & such like, no man more,—  
Yet every man can tell he keeps a whore.

while another  
defiles his  
neighbour's wife,

Philogonous doth love his lust as well,  
But he would clear from all suspicion dwell ; 2392  
'Tis safest gutting at a loafe begunne,  
And therefore he his neighbour[s] wife hath wonne

- To be his paramour ; they may suspect,  
 But hee's soe wary, no man can detect 2396  
 His close encounters. O, but heers the spite,  
 On[e] wench cannot suffice his appetite !  
 His first must then be baude vnto another,  
 She to a third, the daughter to the mother, 2400  
 Til like the parish bull he serves them still,  
 And dabbes their husbandes clean against their will.  
 But he that knew him not, & heard him preach,  
 Would think it were impossible to teach 2404  
 Vertue with such a fervent seeming zeale,  
 And yet thus looslie in his actions deale.  
 You lustfull swine ! that know the will of God,  
 Yet follow your owne waies, think *that* his rod 2408  
 (For soe he saith himselfe) shall scourge your sinne  
 With many stripes ;—with you he will beginne.  
 The greater man, the higher is the evill  
 He doth committ, & he the viler devill. 2412  
 Turne convertites, & make true recantation,  
 And leave at last to act your owne damnation,  
 Lest your reward be Godes just vengeance,  
 And hell your portion & inheritance. 2416  
 Sempronia's married to a gentleman  
 That in the joyes of Venus litle can ;  
 'Tis very likely, & you may believe her,  
 And you, her honest neighbours, should relieve her.  
 Saith lustfull Spurio, " Would she me accept, 2421  
 I'de pawne my head to please her e're I slept,  
 And save the paines of suing a divorce."  
 Yet Messalina doth, without remorse 2424  
 Of conscience for the act, take to her bed  
 A second husband ere the first be dead,  
 With whom she lives but an adulteresse  
 In brutish sinne & sensuall beastlinesse. 2428  
 Pray Iove he please her well, or, though 't be strange,  
 This second for a third I fear shee 'l change.

but is not  
satisfied with one  
or two.

[leaf 28]

If a man heard  
him preach he  
would think he  
could not sin  
thus.

Let him repent,  
or God will judge  
and condemne  
him.

Women, for  
various reasons,

are guilty of  
adultery.

The incest of  
Caesar Borgia,

Borgia's in quiet, & is let alone,  
Although his sister & his whore be one ; 2432

The father likewise doth (a hellish fact !)

With his owne daughter cursed incest act.

Who dares to let him ? Hee's a great commander,

and Alexander VI. Romes triple crownèd Pope, Sixt Alexander ! 2436

Incestuous slaves ! think you to scape *the* rod

Of the Almighty sinne-revenging God ?

No, though the world doe wink at your offence

God never will with wickednesse dispence. 2440

The young wife  
deceives her  
husband,

Sulpitia, leave at last to wrong thy spouse,

Lest thou the furious sleeping lion rouse ;

Desist to act thy aged husbandes scorne,

He hath olde plenty, give him not the horne, 2444

And I'le not tell the world thy hatefull sinne,

How full of luxury thy life hath been,

How many severall lovers thou hast had,

How often thou hast faind to see thy dad, 2448

That by such meanes thou mightst have free accesse

To meet thy paramour. Nor will I presse

Thy conscience with recitall of *that* ill

and robs him to  
put money into  
the hands of her  
lover.

[leaf 28, back]

When thou, thy letchers purse with golde to fill, 2452

Emtiedst thy husbandes bagges ; the diamond ringes,

The sutes of sattin, & such pretty thinges,

Which thou, as pledges of thy lewd desire,

Gavst to thy sweetheart for his lustfull hire, 2456

I'le not once name ; no, I will hold my peace,

Soe thou wilt from thy filthy lust surcease.

Let the man who  
has escaped the  
penalty for rape  
be careful.

Drugo, although thou lately didst escape  
The daunger of the lawe, which for a rape 2460

Awardeth death, be wise & sinne noe more,

Least *that* thou run soe much vpon *the* score

Of wickednesse, that thou canst never pay it ;

And soe for want of meanes how to defraie it, 2464

By death arrested, in helles prison cast,

Thou pine in torment which shall ever last.

Sodomeo scorneth women ; all his joy  
 Is in a rarely featurde lively boy, 2468 Sodomy is not  
unknown in the  
land.  
 With whom (I shame to speake it) in his bed  
 He plaies like Iove with Phrigian Ganimede.  
 Monster of men, worse then the sensuall beast !  
 Which by instinct doth follow the behest 2472  
 Of nature in his kinde, but thou dost fall  
 Into a sinne that's moste vnnaturall.  
 Degenerate bastard ! by some devill got,  
 For man could never, sure, beget a spot 2476 Such men must  
be the children  
of the devil.  
 Of such vncleannesse ; how dost dare enact  
 Soe damnd a crime, soe lewde a loathsome fact ?  
 Dost thou not fear that iust Iove, in his ire,  
 Will raine downe brimstone & consuming fire ; 2480  
 As in his wrath, though many ages since,  
 He did one Sodome, whose concupiscence,  
 Like thine, deservde black helles damnation ?  
 Or that some fearfull invndation 2484  
 In his swift streame, should hurry thee to hell,  
 With damnd fiendes & torturde ghoastes to dwell ?  
 Methinks such thoughts as these should purge thy  
 soule,  
 And keep thy bodie from an act so foule. 2488  
 But 'tis noe marvell though thou be not free  
 From the contagion of this villanie,  
 When the whole land's thus plagued<sup>1</sup> with this sore,  
 Whose beastlinesse then now was never more : 2492  
 In Academie, country, citty, Courte,<sup>2</sup>  
 Infinite are defiled with this spurt.  
 O, grant, my dearest nourse, from whose full brest  
 I have suckt all (if ought I have) that's best, 2496  
 Suffer me to condole the misery  
 Which thou gronst vnder by this villanie !  
 and the Court,  
are alike guilty.

<sup>1</sup> Spelling uncertain : it appears to have been *plagued*,  
 but the *i* is undotted and the *e* is blurred.

<sup>2</sup> MS. Corrte.

I grieve at the  
vices which  
prevail at the  
Universities.  
[leaf 29]

How many towardly young<sup>1</sup> gentlemen  
(Instead of ink, with teares I fill my pen 2500  
To write it) sent vnto thee by theyr friendes  
For art & education, the true endes

Each pedant  
Tutor spoils his  
pupils.

Their parentes aime at, are with this infection  
Poysned by them whose best protection 2504  
Should keep them from all sinne ! Alacke the while !  
Each pedant Tutor should his pupill spoile.  
O, how I grieve at this vnhappy fate,

I pray for a  
speedy reforma-  
tion.

Nothus, without  
crossing the sea,  
has been into  
France.

Because this vice is soe inveterate, 2508  
Growne to so strong a custome that (I fear)  
The world shall end ere they this sinne forbear !  
But I leave thee with my best exoration  
For thy moste speedy & true reformation. 2512

Let those pity  
him who choose;  
he gets none  
from me.

Nothus which came into the world by chaunce  
At a bye window, hath been late in France,  
Yet never crost the seas, it cannot bee ;  
'Tis newes that passes our capacity ! 2516  
'Tis soe, & by th' event I wilbe tride,  
For I am sure hee 's hugely Frenchifide,  
Gallicus morbus is his owne, I swear,  
He has it paide him home vnto a haire. 2520

Claudia has  
caught a clap.

Pitty him they that list, soe will not I,  
Hee 's iustly plagud for his damnd luxurie,  
He might have kept his whore-house-haunting feet  
Out of Picthatch, the Spittle, Turnboll street ;<sup>2</sup> 2524  
He might, forewarnd, have left his pockie drabbes,  
They must have veriuiice that will squeeze such crabbes.  
But he had cause to love a puncke the more,  
Because his mother was an arrant whore. 2528

I cannot chuse but grieve at the mishap  
Of Claudia, which of late hath caught a clap.  
Alack, poore wench ! the trust of promisd marriage

<sup>1</sup> MS. *goung*. It may have been originally *goune*, as the final letter seems to have been altered. Cf. Taylor, "Gown-men," Works, fo. p. 178.

<sup>2</sup> All notorious haunts of prostitutes.

- Hath loded thee with an vnusuall carriadge. 2532 A promise of  
 Take comfort lasse, & I a time will spie marriage has  
 To shew thy lover his discourtesie, been her ruin.
- And though he have thee in this sort beguilde,  
 He shall give somewhat to bring vp the childe ; 2536
- A litle mony from the law will quite thee,  
 Fee but the Sumner, & he shall not cite thee ;  
 Or if he doe, only for fashion sake, Fee the sum-  
 The lawe of thee shall no advantage take. 2540 moner and the  
 And though due pennance thou deservst to doe law will hold you  
 For tredding thus awry thy slippery shoe, innocent.
- Be not dismaide at all ; if thou dost flow  
 In thy frank gufftes, & thy golde freely stow, 2544
- The principall will make thy pennance ebbe.  
 The Comissaries court's a spiders webbe,  
 That doth entangle all the lesser flies, The Commis-  
 But the great ones break through ; it never ties 2548 sary's court is  
 Them in his circling net. Wher golde makes way like a cobweb  
 Ther is no interruption, noe delay which only holds  
 Can hinder his proceeding ; therefore, wench, small flies.
- Thou maist with a bolde face confront the bench. 2552 [leaf 29, back]
- If thy forerunners bribes have made thy peace,  
 Thy shame shall vanish, but thy sinne encrease, Bribery will  
 And when thou once hast scaped this annoy, cover your  
 Goe to it roundly for another boy ; 2556 shame,
- Lose not an inch of pleasure, though thou gaine, but increase your  
 For momentarie ioyes, eternall paine. sin.
- But yet be sure, if thou still goe about  
 To play the drab, my pen shall paint thee out, 2560
- And thy lewde actes vpōn thy forehead score,  
 That all the world may note thee for a whore.
- O Lynceus,<sup>1</sup> that I had thy searching eye !  
 Then would I in each secret corner prie, 2564  
 To finde the hidden knaveries of this age,

If I had the eyes  
 of Lynceus I  
 could expose the  
 vices of this age.

<sup>1</sup> Lynceus, one of the Argonauts, could see through the  
 earth, and distinguish objects at a great distance.

Then Glabria  
should be  
exposed,

And lay them open to this paper stage.  
Then Glabria should not, with her wanton eye,  
Allure faire Quintus to her villanie, 2568

Lusco's sin  
should be noted,

But I would straight detect her for the crime,  
And hinder their appoynted meeting time.  
Then Lusco, 'cause his wife's in years decaide,  
Should not entise to ill her waiting maide, 2572

Scilla's disguise  
ripped off;

But I would spie them out, & note<sup>1</sup> them downe,  
To her discredit & his smale renowne.  
Then Scilla, 'cause she might without suspect  
Play the lewd harlot, & none might detect 2576

Galla should not  
tempt the actor  
with presents,

Her lustfull conversation, should not hide  
Her loosnesse in a masculine outside,  
<sup>2</sup>But with my pen I soone would her vncase,  
And lay her open to noe mean disgrace. 2580

None should  
escape me;  
I would expose  
all.

Then Galla, that insatiate citty dame,  
(Which loves a player, 'cause he hath *the* fame  
Of a rare Actour, & doth in his part  
Conquer huge gigantes, & captive the hart 2584

Of amorous ladies) should not him intice,  
Prone (as all players are) vnto this vice,  
With goodlie presentes. I their match would lett,  
Or catch them sleeping in a Vulcanes nett, 2588

And having caught them to *the* world display  
How lusty Mars with lustfull Venus lay.  
Then lustfull Iove, what shape soe e're he tooke  
Should not deceive mine eye, nor scape my booke. 2592

Thy lust Pasiphae I 'de sett to th' full,  
Whose bestiall appetite desirde a bull.  
Mirrha, thou shouldst not scape, *that* didst desire,  
To make thy father to thy childe a sire. 2596

It was once  
my fortune

But since I cannot, as I would, be fitted,  
Let me detect what I have knowne committed.  
It was my fortune, with some others moe,  
On[e] summers day a progresse for to goe 2600

<sup>1</sup> Final *e* by a later hand.    <sup>2</sup> /I† in margin.

Into the countrie, as the time of year  
Required, to make merrie with good cheer.

[leaf 30]

Imagine Islington to be the place,  
The journey to eat cream. Under the face  
Of these lewd meetings, on set purpose fitted,  
Much villanie is howerly committed.

2604

to go to Islington  
to eat cream.

But to proceed ; some thought there would not be  
Good mirth without faire wenches companie,  
And therefore had provided, a forehand,  
Of wiues & maides a iust proportiond band

2608

To make good  
company,

In number to *the* men of vs ; each on[e]  
Might have his wench vnto himselfe alone.  
I that, till afterwarde, not comprehended

2612

a wench was  
provided for each.

Whereto this meeting chieffie was intended,  
But thought indeed the only true intent  
To spend the time in honest merriment,—  
Went 'mongst the thickest, & had intercourse  
In many a mad & sensuall discourse.

2616

Among the women kinde a wife ther was,  
Her name I could not learne, I therefore passe  
It over ; but a fained one to frame,  
Call her Veneria, that's the fittest name.

2620

Among them  
was a married  
woman,

This wife, *which* with *the* maides did holde her walke,  
I chanc'd to overhear in her lewde talke,  
How she did them by argumentes perswade

2624

whom I will call  
Veneria,

To vse *the* pleasure of the common trade,  
I will repeat, that you may iudge with me,  
Women moste prone to filthy luxurie.

2628

"My friendes," quoth she, "first, all of you must knowe,  
Good things more common doe *the* better grow ;

For 'tis an axiome in morality,  
*Which* you must all believe for verity.

2632

who perswaded  
the maidens to  
lust.

If, then, community doe goodnesse adde  
To actions that are good, who'd be so mad  
To lose the vertue of this common good

When 't may be purchasde without losse of blood ? 2636



For that 'tis good, I think you 'l not deny,  
 Or if you doe, then thus I doe reple :—

To do a friend  
 a pleasure is a  
 good deed,  
 To doe our friend a pleasur's a good deed,  
 If it be done for love, & not for meed ; 2640  
 To doe an act *that* addes to our delight  
 Is it not good? what foole will once deny 't?  
 Besides, the name importes it to be good,  
 For we a good turne call it. With my blood, 2644  
 If all this be to weake, I will maintaine  
 Ther's none of all our sexe that would refraine  
 To vse the pleasure of this knowne delight,  
 If fear did not restraine their appetite. 2648

Secret lechery is  
 less sinful than  
 hypocrisy.  
 And this I holde, *that* secret letcherie  
 Is a lesse sinne then close hypocrisie.  
 A preacher tolde me that the action wrought  
 (Because more seldome then the wandring thought)  
 Is not soe great a fault, soe we chuse time 2653  
 And place convenient to conceile our crime ;  
 And that we will not want, nor lusty boyes  
 Able to give a wench her fill of ioyes. 2656

Her lewd dis-  
 course made my  
 ears glow,  
 Then to it, lasses, when you have desire,  
 'Tis dangerous to suppress a flaming fire!"  
 To hear this lewdnesse both mine eares did glow,  
 But I bit in my tongue, lest there should grow 2660  
 Some discontentment 'mongst them by my speech,  
 Which happily might have procur'de a breach  
 Among vs ; & indeed soe much the rather,  
 Because by circumstances I did gather 2664  
 Wherefore this meeting was, & did intend  
 to observe all vnto the very end.

By this time we th' appointed place attaine,  
 Where straight with welcomes we were entertaind. 2668  
 Musicke was sent for, & good chear preparede,  
 With *which* more like to Epicures we farde  
 Then Christianes ; plenty of wine & creame  
 Did even vpon our table seeme to streame, 2672

but "I bit in my  
 tongue" for the  
 sake of peace,

and because I  
 wanted to see  
 the end.

We had music  
 and good cheer.

With other dainties. Not a fiddlers boy  
 But with the reliicks of our feast did cloy  
 His hungry stomach. After this repast  
 (Which feast with many a bawdy song was graced) 2676

After the feast  
 some fell to  
 dancing, which  
 lasted till dark.

Some fell to dauncing (& dauncing is a cause  
 That many vnto fornication drawes),  
 In which lascivious kinde of merriment,  
 Till the darke evening did approch, we spent 2680

The lightsome day. But now the time drew nigh  
 That was comprisd'e to act their villany ;  
 And therefore after candles were brought in  
 (For then the night grew on) we did beginne 2684

When the candles  
 were brought in  
 the fiddlers were  
 discharged.

The fiddlers to discharge, who being gone,  
 There straight was held a consultation,  
 In which, when each man had his wench assignde,  
 The filthinesse of this lewde act to blinde 2688

With darkenesse, all the candles were put out,  
 Which favouring my intent, I left the rout,  
 And closely stole away, having defraide  
 A great part of the reckning ; which I paid 2692

As soon as the  
 lights were put  
 out I escaped.

Whilst they were all full busie in the darke,  
 Because they should not think I came to sharke  
 Only for vittailles. How the rest agreed,  
 Iudge you which doe this true narration read. 2696

But leaving this mad crew, I have to say  
 Somewhat of bawdes, cheife actours in this play.

Gabrina, in her youth a pretty ducke,  
 Hath been, they say, as good as ever strucke. 2700

Gabrina married  
 a rich fool.

It was her fortune (long she could not tarry  
 'Cause she was faire) with a rich foole to marrie.  
 I call him foole, because he let her have  
 Her minde soe much, that he became her slave 2704

[leaf 31]

To his vndooing. She must keep her coach,  
 Consort with ladies ; each new set abroach  
 Fantastique fashion which she did affect,  
 His gold must flie for ; yet she did respect 2708

She kept her  
 coach and con-  
 sorted with  
 ladies.

- Others above him, vpon whom she spent  
His wealth ; her lust his care could not prevent.
- Her pride and  
sensuality  
brought him to  
beggary, and  
broke his heart.
- Thus soone her pride & sensuality  
Brought him vnto disgrace & beggary, 2712  
Till grieve for her lewd life, his ruind state  
Broke his weak heart, & made him yeild to fate.  
Then was she glad her whores flag to aduance,  
And get her living by a Scottish daunce. 2716  
Thus with her sister, such another piece,  
Many a gallant of his golde they fleece.
- In their age she  
and her sister  
hire out a crew  
of whores.
- Now ceazd with age, & both of them turnd bawdes,  
Olde hackny women, they hire out their jades, 2720  
A crew of whores far worse then crocodiles,  
Killing with fained teares & forged smiles.  
Confusion with their fortunes ever dwell,  
That keep the dores that ope to sinne & hell ! 2724
- These bawds up-  
hold their state
- These bawdes which doe inhabite Troynovant,<sup>1</sup>  
And iet it vp & downe i' th' streetes, aflaunt  
In the best fashion, thus vpholde their state,  
As I haue heard a friend of mine relate, 2728  
Who once in privat manner with another  
Went purposly their fashions to discover.
- by keeping wives  
as well as com-  
mon whores.
- They doe retaine besides these common queanes,  
Even mens wives which are of greatest meanes, 2732  
That yearly pay them tribute for their lust,  
Vpon whose secrecie they doe entrust  
Their blotted reputation, for which pleasure  
They lewdly doe consume their husbandes treasure. 2736  
The custome of these bawdes is thus : if any  
Repaire vnto them (as God knowes too many  
Run to this sinck of sinne), at the first view  
To shew their cheapest ware ; if they will glue 2740  
Their slimy bodies to those common whores,  
The bawdes proceed no farther, keep the dores,  
The price paide, which repentaunce findes to dear,

<sup>1</sup> London. See Taylor, Works, fol. 491.

- And the act done, doe straight the men cashier. 2744  
 But if some gallant, whose out side doth holde  
 Great expectation that good store of golde  
 Will from his bounty shower into their lappes,  
 Come to demaund (for soe it often happes) 2748  
 To see their choysest beauties, him they bring  
 (After request [not]<sup>1</sup> to say any thing)  
 Into a privat roome, which round about  
 Is hung with pictures; all which goodly rout 2752  
 Is fram'de of Venus fashion, femals all,  
 Whom if I name whores, I noe whit miscall,  
 For soe they are, whom these doe represent.  
 All citty dames, which vsually frequent 2756  
 This cursed place, who, though they goe full brave,  
 Are in their lust insatiate as the grave.  
 That picture which doth best affect the eye  
 Of this luxurious gallant, instantly 2760  
 Is by some traine brought thether in true shape  
 Of lively substance. Then good Bacchus grape  
 Flowes in abundance; Ceres must be by,  
 For without them ther is noe venerie. 2764  
 Provocatives to stir vp appetite  
 To brutish lust & sensuall delight,  
 Must not be wanting; lobsters buttered thighs,  
 Hartichoke, marrowbone,<sup>2</sup> potato pies, 2768  
 Anchoves, lambes artificiallie drest stones,  
 Fine gellies of decocted sparrowes bones.  
 Or if these faile, th' apothecaries trade  
 Must furnish them with rarest marmalade, 2772  
 Candid eringoes, & rich marchpaine stuffe;  
 Vpon which cates ther is consume enough  
 To give sufficient to a hundred men,  
 Spent but on ordinarie fare. But then 2776  
 These dainties must be washd downe well with wine,

But if he looks  
rich he is shown  
into a private  
room

hung round with  
portraits of City  
dames.

[leaf 31, back]

The picture  
which takes his  
fancy is soon  
replaced by its  
"lively sub-  
stance."

Wines and  
nutritious food  
are provided in  
abundance.

Lobsters, pies,  
jellies, mar-  
malade,

<sup>1</sup> Blank in MS.; something erased.  
<sup>2</sup> Very much like Moorrowbone in MS.

sack, eggs,  
Muscadine,  
Alicant,

With sacke & sugar, egges & muscadine,  
With Allegant, the blood of Veneric,  
That strengthens much the backes infirmity. 2780

and dainties  
enough to crack  
a man's purse-  
strings.

Abundance of these dainties they 'l not lacke,  
Although it make my gallantes purstrings cracke.  
And yet sometimes these cittie dames will spend  
As if their husbandes wealth could ne're have end. 2784  
Then after this libidinous collation  
They doe proceed to act their owne damnation.

Thus is our great  
city made a  
brothel.

Thus is the worthiest citty of our land  
Made a base brothel-house, by a lewde band 2788  
Of shamelesse strumpets, whose vncurb'd swing  
Many poore soules vnto confusion bring.

The Magistrates  
should rid it of  
this cursed crew.

You magistrates, which holde Astræus sword,  
For countries cause joyned all with one accord 2792  
To clear the citty of this cursed crew,  
Least the whole land the noysomenesse doe rewe

Of their contagion. For the better health  
Of the whole body of the commonwealth, 2796  
Cut of these rotten members, & beginne  
First at the head of this notorious sinne.

Remove the  
cause, and the  
effect will perish.

For this is written one the Lidian stone,  
"The effect doth perish when the cause is gone." 2800

These bawdes & panders which doe give reecat  
(Being indeed the meanes wherby they eat)

[leaf 32]

To whores & ruffians, whose damnd villanie  
Doth purchase gold & sell iniquity ; 2804

Were they expeld the cittie, ther would grow  
More continence, for<sup>1</sup> them these heades doe flow ;  
The springs of lust, these fountaines, being drawne dry  
The lesser streames would stint immediatly. 2808

Lop off these  
ulcered members  
with the hand  
of justice.

Lop of these vlcere members of our land,  
These putrified members ; with the hand  
Of iustice chase hence this vngodly rout,—  
Subtract the fewell & the fire goes out,— 2812

<sup>1</sup> ? from.

And let our land this damnd devillish crew,  
 As excrementes, out of her bosome spewe;  
 And then you manifestly shall perceave  
 The greater part their brutish lust will leave. 2816  
 For every man this olde saide saw beleeves,  
 "Were no receivers there would be no theeves."

"No receivers,  
 no thieves."

Thus City scapes not, nor the Court is free  
 From obseane actes of hatefull luxurie. 2820  
 Those men or women *that* doe make resorte,  
 In hope of gaine or honour, to *the* Court,  
 Doe live soe idely, & in such excesse,  
 That it must needs produce this wickednesse. 2824

The Court is not  
 free from these  
 sins.

Vitellius hath gotten a good place,  
 And might live well i' th' Court, had he *the* grace  
 To keep it to good endes, & vse it soe,  
 "But lightly come," we say, "doth lightly goe." 2828  
 It cost him nothing but a supple knee,

"Lightly come,  
 lightly go."

<sup>1</sup> And oyl mouth & much observancie,  
 But he doth vpon worse then nothing spend it,  
 Yet 'tis well spent, he saies, & hee 'l defend it. 2832

He keeps a whore i' th' city, what needs that?  
 Ther 's whores enough i' th' Court, *which* (as a cat  
 Waites to supprise a mouse) watch to espie

City and Court  
 are alike.

<sup>2</sup> Whom they can draw vnto their villanie, 2836  
 Some for meer lust, others for greedinesse  
 Of gaine; as, 'mongst all your court landresses  
 If but one honest woman can be found,  
 I 'le give her leave to give me twenty pound.<sup>3</sup> 2840

Scarce one honest  
 woman to be  
 found.

But these are stale; Vitellius must have one  
 That 's a rare piece of *the* best fashion,  
 Although she make these three thinges fare *the* worse,  
 His soule, his body, & his strouting purse. 2844  
 His purse, her gay apparel & fine fare  
 Have made allready very thin & bare;

They ruin soul,  
 body, and purse.

<sup>1</sup> /Ion in margin of MS.

<sup>2</sup> /I in margin of MS.

<sup>3</sup> MS. 20<sup>l</sup>.

Bodily disease.

His bodie, her vnwholsome luxurie  
 Hath brought to *the* disease of veneric ; 2848  
 And I much fear this their lewde fashion  
 Will bring his soule vnto damnation.

[leaf 32, back]  
 I need not talk  
 of Silvius and  
 City dames,

Silvius doth shew *the* citty dames brave sights,  
 And they for *that* doe pleasure him a nightes. 2852  
 Citty & country are beholding to him,  
 And glad with purse & body both to woo him.

when higher  
 personages are  
 guilty.

But what talke I of these, when brighter starres  
 Darken their splendant beauty with *the* scarres 2856  
 Of this insatiate sinne? If honour fall  
 Gentry must needes submit himselfe a thrall.

Forbear, m,  
 Muse, to tax  
 nobility!

But whether climst thou, my aspiring Muse?  
 It wilbe thought presumption & abuse 2860  
 To taxe nobility! Forbear, forbear!

Thou art an orbe above thy native sphere,  
 Something thou canst not in oblivion drowne ;—  
 Why come one then, & briefly set it downe. 2864

One boasts that  
 he has made  
 fifty-one cuckolds  
 in the year:

I heard Brusano by his honour swear  
 He on[e] & fifty cuckoldes made last yeare.

Pitty it was he did noe farther goe,  
 Each weeke would have done well to struck a doe, 2868  
 And given *the* keeper his due fee to seeke

but he who made  
 so many,

When as he came to th' two & fiftith weeke.  
 Whom shall we finde to make vp *the* iust number?  
 To bring 't about it my conceit doth cumber. 2872

is himself the  
 fifty-second.

Why, what a foole am I to seek thus farre!  
 You did see many cuckoldes make or marre?  
 Well then, i' faith you may, for all your pelfe,  
 Make vp the two & fiftieth *your* selfe! 2876

Madam's page  
 knows all her  
 arrangements,

Madame Emilia hath a proper squire  
 To vs her vnto *the* filthy mire  
 Of soule-polluting lust, who knowes his cues  
 Wher he must leave her, where attendance vse; 2880  
 And can while 's lady actes the horrid crime,  
 With picking rushes trifle out *the* time;

And for a need, when she wantes fresh supplie,  
Her sensuall desires satisfie.

2884 and can at times  
supply her wants  
himself.

Base slave! *which* standest centinell to lust,  
Suffering thy soule, polluted with *the* rust  
Of cankered sinne, by thy neglect to *perish*,  
Which above all *things* thou shouldst love & cherish!  
Thou instrument of sinne & Sathans<sup>1</sup> rage!  
Incarnate devill! pandarizing page!

2889

Be sure (vnlesse repentance pardon gaine)  
There doth a place in hell for thee remaine.

2892

But he may rest  
assured that  
there's a place  
reserved in hell  
for him,

And for those lechers *which* will never linne  
(Accounting lust but as a veniall sinne)

To committ incest, whoredome, sodomie,  
Defile *the* land with damnd adulterie,

2896

as well as for  
all who are  
guilty of incest,  
whoredom,  
sodomy,  
and adultery.

Which strive not to suppress their lewde desires,  
But fewell ad to their lust-burning fires,

By seeking wicked opportunities

To act their damnable iniquities,

2900

[leaf 38]

Till they have ruind all their hope of blisse,

Devilles will hale them to helles darke abisso.

<sup>1</sup> MS. Sathange.



## Sat[ira] 7.

[AGAINST THE PASSIONS OF THE MIND.]

## ARGUMENTUM.

Reginam mentis rationem, serva rebellis  
 Passio devincit, calce tyrannia premit,  
 Dum gerit immodicos (victa ratione) triumphos,  
 Incautos homines, ad mala damna rapit.

God gave to man  
 a reasonable soul  
 that he might  
 govern all things.

God gave to man a reasonable soule,  
 That he might govern vnder his controle  
 All other creatures in the world beside,  
 Yet man wantes reason how himselfe to guide. 2906

Reason is the  
 queen of the soul,

Reason, *the* soules queen, whose imperious sway  
 Should rule the microcosme of man, & stay

By her wise governing authority

Each insolent affections tyranny,

2910

but she is become  
 the slave of her  
 subject,

Is through much, too much, sufferance become

Slave to her subiect, who vsurps her roome.

Ambitiously aspiring passion,

Ever delighting in rebellion,

2914

Collects her forces, meets her prince i' th' field,

who boldly rebels  
 against her.

Subdues her power in conflict, make[s] her yeild.

And now *the* tyrannesse beares all *the* stroke,

Clogging her suffering neck with servile yoke, 2918

And proud insulting in her victorie,

Triumphs o're mans base imbecillity.

Thus his owne servant, every base affection,  
Keeps him in slavish t[h]raldome & subjection.

2922

Every base  
affection keeps  
man in thraldom.

By love or hatred, by ioy, grieve, or feare,  
Desire, boldenesse, anger, hope, dispaire,  
Man is enthrald, & doth submitt his will  
Their tyrannies & pleasures to fulfill.

2926

The Amoretto, pearc'd with Cupides stroke,  
Must straight submitt his neck vnto *the* yoke  
Of peevish love. Either his mistrisse haire,  
Or else her forehead is beyond compare ;

2930

If man falls in  
love he must  
submit to the  
yoke of peevish  
fancy,

Her eyes are starres, & her cheekes roses be,  
Her lips pure rubies, her teeth ivorie,  
Her breath *perfume*, her voice sweet harmonie  
Passing Threician Orpheus melody ;

2934

The path between her *brestes* a whiter way  
Then that celestiaall via lactea ;

and compare his  
mistress to

Her veines pure azure, o' what colour's best,  
Her skin sleek sattin or *the* cygnettes brest ;

2938

[leaf 33, back]

A Venus in whom all good partes doe hitt,  
More then a second Pallas in her witt ;

Venus, Pallas,  
Juno, and Diana.

In stately pace and dazeling maiestie,

Another Iuno ; in pure chastety

2942

Spotlesse Diana. Thus is all her feature  
Beyond *the* fashion of a humane creature.

Then what "ay mees !" what crossing of his armes,  
What sighs, what teares, what love-compelling charmes  
He vseth, would enforce a sicke man smile !

2947

Then to hear his  
"Ah me's !" till  
he gets dis-  
enchanted !

Yet all the paines he takes is to beguile

His sillie soule ; for having once enioyed

The thing, for *which* he erst was soe anoyde,

2950

The tide is turnd, the saint doth seem a devill,

And he repentes that soule-bewitching evill

Then his "saint"  
seems a devil.

<sup>1</sup> Which once his fancy as a good adorde ;—

His mistresse love, I mean, is now abhorde.

2954

Anothers minde by hate distempered is,

The mind of  
another is over-  
come by hate,

<sup>1</sup> /I in margin of MS.

- Malicing whom in shew he seemes to kisse.  
 This base affection causeth dismall strife,  
 Despoileth honour, & destroyeth life. 2958
- which he hides  
 by dissimulation. Yet in these dayes 'tis counted pollicie  
 To vse dissimulation ; villanie  
 Masqu'd<sup>1</sup> vnder friendships title (worst of hate)  
 Makes a man liue secure & fortunate. 2962
- These Machiavillians are *the* men alone  
 That thrive i' th' world, & gett promotion.  
 Such as he are  
 worse than  
 Timon of Athens. Athenian Timon, in his hatefull moode,  
 Was ne're soe bad as some of this damnde broode, 2966
- This brood of Caines, these dissembling knaves,  
 These mankinde-haters, bloody minded slaves,  
 Which all *the* world with horrid murders fill,  
 Laughing one those whom they intend to kill. 2970
- A third ther is, *which* gaining some vaine toy,  
 A third sort have  
 their minds  
 overwhelmed  
 with joy. Is overwhelmed through excessive ioy.  
 The husbandman, if that his crops proove well,  
 Hath his heart fild with joy 'cause his barnes swell ;  
 The marchant, if his gaines doe safe come in, 2975
- Is with ioy ready to leape out on 's skinne ;  
 The vehemency of this passion 's such,  
 Many have<sup>2</sup> died by joying overmuch. 2978
- Another, shuning comfort & reliefe,  
 Some are over-  
 come with grief, Suffers himselfe to be surchargde with grieffe,  
 And soe this passion doth his reason blinde  
 That it begettes a frenzie in his minde. 2982
- Another, if that fear doe him assaile,  
 Doth suffer that affection to prevaile,  
 [leaf 34] And doth bring him [in]to such franticke fittes,  
 As you would judge him to be out on 's wittes. 2986
- and some with  
 fear. Each bush doth fright him, & each flying bird,  
 Yea his owne shadowe maketh him afeard.

<sup>1</sup> *Masque* originally written ; altered into *Masqu'd*.<sup>2</sup> This *have* seems to have been *o'ave*, but a line is drawn through the *o*.

- Desire in others sheweth forth his mighte,  
 Making them follow brutish appetite. 2990  
 Desire of honour fires th' ambitious minde ;  
 Desire of wealth the covetous doth blinde ;  
 The lecher cannot lustfull thoughtes withstand :  
 Reason's controlde by passions that commaund. 2994  
 Another, rash & indiscreetly bolde,  
 Hazardes himselfe in dangers manifolde,  
 Yet thinks himselfe (mislead by his temerity)  
 To vse true valour & dexterity ; 2998  
 When folly his companion is assignde,  
 For "who soe bolde as bayard that is blynde ?  
 With rashnesse is conioyned impudence,  
 With which my Muse in noe case can dispence. 3002  
 His talke is bawdry, he doth rather choose  
 His soule then a prophane conceite to loose.
- Mischiefe-procurer anger rules another,  
 That knowes not friend from foe ; stranger or brother,  
 All's one to him ; for in his bedlem fitt, 3007  
 Which quite deprives him of his litle witt,  
 He cares not whom he strikes, or what vile wordes  
 That cutt like razors, or sharp edged swordes, 3010  
 Flie from his hasty tongue. This passion swaies  
 And rules over too many now adayes,  
 For each vaine toy stirreth vp man to furie,  
 When he in patience greatest wrongs should burie. 3014
- Hope & affection is that doth least harme  
 Vnto the soule of man ; for it doth arme  
 With constancy in trouble to endure  
 The worst of evill that sad fates procure. 3018  
 It makes the prisoner, bound in givies of steele,  
 In expectation of release, to feele  
 Noe torment in his bondage ; cures the sicke  
 Of his diseases ; makes the halfe dead quicko. 3022  
 Yet is this good conioyned with some evill ;  
 To hope on God is good, but from the devill

Honour fires  
the ambitious.

Rashness by some  
is mistaken for  
valour.

Impudence is  
often conjoined  
with rashness.

Anger rules some,  
and deprives  
them of their  
wits.

They care not  
whom they  
wound.

Hope and affec-  
tion do the least  
harm.

They console  
the prisoner and  
cure the sick.

- Don't expect aid from the devil. To expect healp, as they doe which attend  
With expectation of a happy end 3026  
To some ill act, is diabolicall,  
And not by Christians to be vsde at all.  
But when I come to think vpon dispaire  
(Which to withstand the rediest meanes is prairer) 3030  
Despair drives men to suicide. I muse to think it should see much bewitch  
The minde of man, making *the* soule (like pitch)  
Commit such deeds of darkenesse, such damnd ill,  
As with our owne handes our owne lives to spill. 3034
- [leaf 34, back] Farre be it from me all passion to exclude  
Out of mans soule, my meaning's not so rude ;  
A man void of passion is void of good. For 'tis an axiome not to be withstood,  
"He *that* is void of passion's voide of good." <sup>1</sup> 3038  
Love of *that* love deserving Diety,  
Which doth produce effectes of charity,  
Love to God kindles devotion. And kindles in mans heart<sup>2</sup> devotion,  
Once to extenuate were a sinfull motion 3042  
Of a pestiferous braine ; noe, I desire  
To ad more fewell to that holy fire.
- Godly hate is commendable. Nor can I but commend of godlie hate,  
Detesting sinne, *that* doth commaculate 3046  
The soule of man ; this passion's worth commending,  
That hates the offence, yet loves *the* man offending.  
Neither will I restraine *the* heart from joy
- Joy in moderation is good, See that with moderation we imploy 3050  
This passion to good vses ; hartes rejoyce,  
But let *the* cause be singuler & choice.  
Grief likewise must abounde in every man  
That will indeed be a true Christian, 3054
- so are godly sorrow and filial fear. Sorrow *the* badge of true repentance weares,  
Sinne must be purgde by a whole flood of teares.  
<sup>3</sup> To filial feare I likewise doe assent,

<sup>1</sup> *blood* was first written, then a line drawn through it, and *good* written after.

<sup>2</sup> MS. heard.

<sup>3</sup> /I and written in margin of MS.

That 's awd from sinne by love, not punishment. 3058

Salvations hope, celestially oyes desire,

Vertuous boldnesse, with religious ire,

Are heavenly passions not to be denide,

But as occasion serves, to be applide

3062

To their true endes. Affectiones of such kinde

Mie Muse disclaims not ; but all such as blinde

The eyes of reason, & doe quite pervert

The soule, mans better intellectuall part,

3066

That keep him from *the* path of his salvation,

And lead *the* way *which* brings vnto damnation,

These, these they be, on *which* I doe engage

My vexèd Muse to wreck her spleenfull rage.

3070

Philautus with his very soule doth love

A wench as faire as Venus milck white dove ;

He loves his hunting-horse, his hauke, his hound,

His meat & drink, his morning sleeps profound ; 3074

He loves to follow each new-fangled fashion,

He loves to hear men speake his commendation,

He loves his landes, *that* bring him store of pelfe,

But above all thinges he doth love himselfe.

3078

In all this love noe love of God I finde,

Noe love of goodnesse, but a love confinde

To sensuall delights, to sinne & ease,

A love to others soe himselfe to please.

3082

Thou impious worldling, leave this vaine affection,

[leaf 35]

*Which* only on thy selfe hath a reflection ;

This sinne relinquish, lest incensèd Iove

Doe iustly plague thy misapplyèd love.

3086

I saw (a sight *that* made me much affraide)

Amorphus kisse his mothers kitchin-maide.

Me thought as both their heades together came,

I saw *the* devill kissing of his dam :<sup>1</sup>

3090

And yet this foole 's in love with her 'bove measure,

Calls her *the* mistresse of his<sup>2</sup> ioy & pleasure ;

Virtuous boldness  
and religious ire,

my Muse dis-  
claims not ;  
but all such  
affections as lead  
man to sin.

Philautus loves  
many things,

but himself  
most of all.

This is love  
misapplied.

Amorphus is in  
love with his  
mother's kitchen-  
maid.

<sup>1</sup> Final *e* crossed out.

<sup>2</sup> MS. *her*.

It is a case of  
like to like;  
the collier and  
the devil.

Swears *that* faire roses grow vpon her cheekes,  
When I'le be sworne 'tis fitter place for leekes ; 3094  
Saies her sweet breath his amarus fires increase,  
When she smelles filthy strong of durt & grease.

"But like to like, *the collier & the devil*,"  
He & his wench ; she stammers, he doth drivell ; 3098  
He squints, & she doth gogle wondrous faire ;  
His bottle-nose is red, soe is her haire ;  
She hath a crooked backe, he a polte foote ;  
His face is blacke, & hers begrimd'e with soote ; 3102  
A loving lovely couple most divine,  
Pitty it were *that* they should not combine.

Pamphila is in  
love with every  
man she sees.

Pamphila is in love with every man  
That comes within her sight, & if she can 3106  
Will prostitute her body to his will,  
And never leave till she her lust fullfill.

Phœdra's love to  
her stepson is  
turned to hate.

Stepmother Phœdra woos her husbandes sonne,  
Hypolitus, but he with care doth shunne 3110  
Her odious lust, loathing a sinne soe vile  
As his sires bed with incest to defile ;  
But still she sues, & still he doth denie,  
Till vrgde to farre, he doth her presence fie. 3114  
Lust thus by verteous chastetie withstood  
Is turnd to hate, & hate thirsts after blood ;  
And his hartes blood it is this thirst must ease ;  
Only his death can her fell hate appease. 3118

Honorius is per-  
secuted because  
of his virtues.

True Machiavillian Cæcilius  
With hate doth prosecute Honorius,  
Because his vertues did deserve more love,  
And he i' th' Court respected was above 3122  
His high aspiring selfe. Yet till *the end*  
In outward shew he seemd to be his friend.  
But when *that* Fortune had once turnd her wheele  
He was *the first that* did his furie feelee ; 3126  
For then his rage burst forth, & it is thought  
This one mans hate his sad destruction wrought.

Misotochus (*which* his hand will sooner lend  
 To bring his neighbour to vntimely end 3130  
 Then save his life) hath horded vp his corne,  
 Ready to burst his garners with *the* horne  
 Of his aboundance, & doth hope his seed  
 Kept from *the* market will a famine breed ; 3134  
 And therfore will not sell a graine this year,  
 Nor to sustaine his householde thresh an eare ;  
 But lives one rootes like a Diogenes,  
 With poor thin drink, & course bread mad[e] of pease.

A man who  
 would rather  
 help to kill than  
 save life,  
 [leaf 35, back]  
 keeps his corn  
 till there's a  
 famine.

What though *the* poore doe want, begge, starve, & dye,  
 They get from him noe healp in miserie.  
 Their hunger feeds him fat, he ioyes to see  
 Their death-procuring sad calamity. 3142

Though the poor  
 die of want they  
 get no help from  
 him.

Thou hateful cynick-dog, belov'd of none,  
 Because none loving, not thy selfe alone !  
 Inhuman devill ! think some fatall hower  
 Will bring huge troupes of vermine, to devoure 3146  
 Thy graine & thee ; or that from heaven will fall  
 Consuming fyre & destroy it all.

But troops of  
 vermin devour  
 him and his  
 corn.

Looke for some fearfull vengeance to be sent,  
 Some plague vnheard of, some straunge punnishment ;  
 For such damnd hatred, iust revenging God 3151  
 Will scourge thy sinne with some vnusuall rodde.

Nænius hath with much officious labour  
 Recovered his mistrisses lost favour, 3154  
 For *the* which act *the* foole's soe overioyde  
 That through excesse therof he is annoide.

One fool was so  
 overjoyed at his  
 mistress's  
 favours,

When she vouchsafte *that* he might kiss her hand,  
 The asse had much adoe on 's feet to stand, 3158  
 He was soe inly ravisht with delight

Of *that* rare pleasure : such another fight  
 Twixt reason & his passion would have sent  
 A foolish soule to Plutoes regiment. 3162

that another fit  
 like it would  
 have killed him.

When Carthaginian Hanniball, *that* stout  
 And politicke captaine, *which* soe often fought



With Roman Consuls in their native soile,  
 And their best forces many times did foile, 3166  
 It is recorded by cronologers  
 And excellent histriographers,

A Roman matron  
 heard that her  
 two sons were  
 killed in the  
 battle of Cannas.

In *that* unluckie Cannas overthrowe,  
 When few or none escape deaths fatall blowe, 3170  
 A certaine woman dwelling then at Rome  
 Heard her two sonnes had their eternall doome;  
 For *which* (as nature would) she did lament,  
 Her eyes (bare witness) all with teares besprent. 3174

But they escaped,  
 and she was so  
 overcome when  
 she saw them,  
 that she died.

But *the* young men scaping by flight their foe  
 Recover Rome & to their mother goe ;  
 She hearing both alive returnèd were  
 And bid her former sorrow to forbear, 3178  
 Will not beleewe reporte, but trust her eyes,  
 When sodainly opprest with ioy she dies.

[leaf 36]

One dies in the  
 act of sin.

Mopsa, they say, o'recome with joy lies dead,  
 But how ? i' th' act of her lost mayden head ! 3182  
 A fearfull end, to die in act of sinne,  
 And in this death a second death beginne,  
 A dayly living death, yet dying paine  
 Which shall in perpetuity remaine. 3186

Another mourns  
 her puppy's  
 death.

Luctantia, cease thy lamentation !  
 Thou mone'st thy puppies death with greater passion  
 Then *the* offences *that* thou dost committe  
 'Gainst thy Creatour ; *which* iust ne're a whit 3190  
 Grieve thy seard conscience ; noe remorse for sinne  
 On[e] tear enforceth, but for every pinne,  
 For every trifle else, that doth distast  
 Thy foolish liking, thou dost even wast 3194  
 Thy selfe in sorrow. Wash thy blubbered eyes,

She should weep  
 for iniquity.

And cry no more for shame ! If thou be wise  
 See that hence forth thou keep thy fludgates dry,  
 And weep for nothing but iniquity. 3198

Mutius, why art thou thus opprest with grieve ?  
 Take comfort man, & thou shalt finde reliefe ;

Be not dejected, bear a constant minde :

What though the tempest of an [a]dverse winde 3202 If adversity come  
do not be cast  
down.  
Hath blowne thy fortunes downe, ruind thy state ?

Wilt thou for this accuse *the* god of fate,

And yeild to sorrow ? Doe not see ; beware,

'Twas mercy in him then thy life to spare. 3206

When he destroide thy goods, had 't been his pleasure

He might have ruinde thee & them together.

But now thy substaunce & thy wealth is lost,

Thou art vndone, & all thy hopes are crost ; 3210

Ther is noe meanes to rise : who once doth fall

Is still kept downe, & cannot climbe at all.

Fear not, Antæus more couragious grew,

And by his fall did still his strength renew. 3214 Antæus became  
more couragious  
by his fall.

Be thou like him ; may be this misery

Was pre-ordainde for thy felicity.

Grieve not at all, ther's blessing still in store,

And he *that* tooke thy goodes can give thee more. 3218

Ther's three ill feares (to one good filiall)

There are three  
ill feares :

A worldly, servile, & a naturall :

A worldly feare is when some worldly gaine

Makes vs doe evill, or from good abstaine ; 3222

When for our proffit, pleasure, & our ease,

We doe not good, but men fear to displease.

There is a worldly fear, a fear to lacke

Things necessary for *the* maw or backe, 3226 A worldly fear,  
or fear for want  
of things  
necessary.

Which hath in nature greater confidence,

Then in Gods all-foreseeing providence.

[leaf 36, back]

Naturall fear is a distraction

Of mind & senses, by th' iniectiō 3230

Of some moste eminent danger ; & this passion

Is great where faith doth want his operation.

A servile fear's a fear of punnishment

Vnto *the* reprobate coincident, 3234

A servile fear, or  
a fear of punish-  
ment for ill  
deeds.

Whom oftentimes vnto good actes doth drawe,

Not fear of God, but fear of humane lawe.

- Letia doth fear to play *the* whore with any,  
 And yet she loves the sport as well as many 3238  
 That act the sinne ; what hinders her intent ?<sup>1</sup>  
 O she's affraide of shame & punnishment.
- A man would  
 steal, but he  
 fears punishment. Irus is poore, yet feares to play *the* theefe,  
 And yet his fingers itch to get reliefe, 3242  
 "But the burnt childe (we say) doth dread *the* fire ;"—  
 Hee's burnt i' th' hand, the next is halters hire.  
 Romanus keeps his monthly residence
- The Church  
 dignitary would  
 neglect his duty,  
 only he fears the  
 consequences. At church, although against his conscience ; 3246  
 He would refraine (because he doth abhor it)  
 But *that* he feares to be presented for it.  
 Bellina, tost in a tempestuous sea,  
 Fears drowning much, & fear doth make her pray. 3250  
 And yet her prayers, *which* doe seeme profounde,  
 Are but lip-labour & a hollow sound ;  
 For set a shore, vnlesse apparent evill  
 Affright her much, she fears nor God nor devill. 3254
- Phorbus has  
 been frightened,  
 but it was only  
 a cat, Phorbus, what makes thee looke soe like a ghoast ?  
 Thy face is pale, thy sences are quite lost,  
 Thy haire vpon thy head doth stand vpright  
 As if thou hadst been haunted with a spright. 3258  
 Why soe thou hast, thou thinkst ; what, hast thou soe ?  
 How scapdst thou from him ? would he let thee goe ?
- which he thought  
 was the devil. Sure 'twas a very honest devill, friend,  
 Wer he hobgoblin, fairie, elve, or fiend. 3262  
 Thou fearfull idiot ! looke, it was a catt,  
 That frights thee thus, I sawe her wher she satt ;  
 But thou with conscience guilty of much evill  
 Dost deeme *the* cat to be a very devill. 3266
- Caligula creeps  
 under the bed,  
 but it is a poor  
 shelter. Caligula, creepst vnderneath thy bed ?  
 That's a poore shelter to defend thy head  
 'Gainst Ioves feard thunderbolte ; huge Atlas hill  
 Cannot preserve thee, when he meanes to kill. 3270
- One wishes for  
 an estate Votarius wisheth for a great estate,  
<sup>1</sup> MS. intentent.

And saith *the* poore should then participate  
 Of all his blessings ; yet doth nothing give  
 Although he be exceeding well to live, 3274  
 And might healp others, till his substaunce grew ;  
 But *the* olde proverbe is exceeding true,  
 "That these great wishers, & these common woulders,  
 Are never (for *the* moste part) good householders." 3278

[leaf 37]  
 that he might  
 assist others.

Timophila her part of heaven would sell  
 To be a ladie, she so much doth swell  
 With this ambitious longing, to be cald  
 Madam at every word ; to be enstalde 3282  
 In such a chaire of state, were heaven it selfe.  
 Ambitious woman, high aspiring elfe !  
 All thy desires are wicked, thou vnblest,  
 Vnlesse Godes Spirit, working in thy brest, 3286  
 Change thy desire from vaine & earthly toies  
 To covet truely after heavenly ioyes.

Another would  
 sell heaven to be  
 a lady and be  
 called Madam.

Chremes is troubled with *the* greedy minde  
 Of golde-desiring Midas ; he doth finde 3290  
 Noe comfort but in gaping after gaine.  
 Would to his wish awarded were *the* paine  
 That Midas felt ; who, thirsting after golde,  
 Wishd *that* what e're he touchd might change *the*  
 mould 3294

Chremes is  
 greedy, and his  
 only comfort is  
 in gain.

Midas wished all  
 things turned  
 into gold.

Into *that* purer mettall. Phœbus graunt  
 Confirmd *the* misers wish, but soone did daunt  
 The wretches minde ; for all *the* foode he tooke  
 To comfort nature, cleane his forme forsooke 3298  
 And turnd to golde. The asse had surely starvde  
 Had not Apolloes power his life presernde  
 By taking of his wish. May the intent  
 Of Chremes meet with *the* like punnishment ; 3302  
 Or, since *that* Midas greedy minde he beares,  
 May he with Midas wear *the* asses eares.

and had starved  
 had not Apollo  
 taken off his  
 wish.

Dame Polupragma, gossip Tittle-tattle,  
 Suffers her tongue, let loose at randome, prattle 3306

Dame Tittle-  
 tattle

goes to public  
feasts,

Of all occurrentes ; comes to publike feastes  
Without invitemēt, 'mongst *the* worthiest gūestes  
Takes vp her roome at table, where, more bolde  
Then truly welcome, she discourse will holde 3310  
Of state affaires, talke of divinity  
As moves *the* hearers to deride her folly, }  
But grieves me to *the* heart, that thinges soe holy, }  
Things which in greatest estimation stand, 3314  
Should by her foolish lips be soe prophande.  
But Betterice let me thee this lesson teach,  
To leave those thinges *that* are above thy reach.

Temerus, wishing  
to advance  
himself,

Temerus, *which* i' th' warre had borne a launce, 3318  
Vpon some great exploite would needes aduance  
His high attempting minde, & doe some act,  
To make *the* world applaud his worthy fact.

[leaf 37, back]

undertook to kill  
the generall of  
the foes' army.

Then (ne're regarding what might him befall) 3322  
He takes in hand to kill *the* generall  
Of the foes armie ; but his vaine intent  
Met with as ill successe ; care did prevent  
His desperate boldnesse, ere he could come nigh 3326  
His wishèd end ; for, taken for a spie,

Brought to the  
rack he confesses  
all

And brought to th' racke, torture did him compell  
The truth of his straunge stratagem to tell ;  
For *which the* wretch in horrid torment lies, 3330  
Being iustly plagu'de for his rash enterprise.

Anaidus, art soe clean deuoid of grace ?

Some men sin  
and boast of it.

Hast thou soe impudent a brasen face,  
Not only to act sinne with greedinesse, 3334  
But to make boast of thy damnde wickednesse ?  
Was 't not enough with wordes to have beguild  
Thy mothers maide & gotten her with childe,  
But *that* thou must most shamefully beginne 3338  
To make a iest of this thy hellish sinne

They think  
money can buy  
them off,

'Mongst thy companions ? Thou perhaps dost think,  
Because thy law-p~~er~~verting cursèd chink  
Hath freed thee from *the* standing in a sheet 3342

(A punishment for thy offence moste meet)

That there remains noe more? Yes, ymp of hell,

There is a Iudge *which* in the heavens doth dwell,

An vncorrupted Iudge, *that* will award

3346

but an uncor-  
rupted Iudge  
dwells in heaven.

Damnation for thy sinne, vnlesse regard

Of *that* vnhappy state wherin thou art,

Softning (I fear) thy vnrelenting heart,

Shew thee thy soules deformity, & in

3350

Repentaunce fountaine make thee purge thy sinne.

Looke vpon Adrus in his furious ire!

He seemes to burne like some red cole of fire;

How his eyes flame! how his limbs shake with rage!

How his voice thunders, as he ment to wage

3355

Warre against heaven! Surely the cause is great

That makes him in this sort himselfe forget;

It cannot but be matter of much consequence,

3358

What moves him  
so?

That moves *the* man to this impatience?

Faith no, you are deceivde; *the* cause was smale,

A better man then he would put vp all,

Were *the* disgrace more hainous, *which* is none

3362

But *that* his cholericke humour makes it one.

This asse (*which* for *the* wagging of a straw

His dagger vpon any man will drawe)

Walking i' th' street, was iustled from *the* wall

3366

He'll draw his  
dagger vpon  
any man:—

Downe almost to *the* channell; this is all

That puttes him in this fume! Would you surmise,

[leaf 38]

A man that hath the vse of reasons eyes

To guide himselfe, should for a cause soe light,

3370

Soe smale a matter, be in such a plight?

Ready to frett himselfe to death, to sweare,

To curse, & banne, as if [he] meant to teare

The earth in sunder, only for this end,

3374

And all this fury  
because he  
knows not on  
whom to bend  
his fury!

Because he knowes not vpon whom to bend

The furie of his rage! Thou irefull foole!

Vse henceforth to frequent *the* learned schoole

Of sacred vertue, *which* will thee inspire

3378

With patience to moderat thine ire.

Good Mistriss Orgia, holde your hasty handes!

Because your maides have not pind in your bandes

You who lay the  
stick about your  
servants'  
shoulders,

According to your minde, must *the* stick flie 3382

About their shoulders straight? Should they replie

In your owne language to you, you were servde

According as *your* rage had well deservde.

But this is nothing with this furious dame, 3386

Ther's other matters *that* deserve more blame.

and break your  
husband's head,

She will not stick to breake her husbandes head,

Reville<sup>1</sup> him to his face & wish him dead

In most reproachfull manner; he, good man, 3390

Dares not replie a worde, but gettes him gone

Till her fit's past, & doth with patience

Endure his wives outragious insolence.

learn to rule  
your passions.

Thou furious vixen, learne to rule thy passion, 3394

And vse thy husband in a better fashion,

Or I will have thy name to be enrolde

For a moste shamelesse & notorious scolde!

Manlius lives in  
hope of inherit-  
ing his uncle's  
lands.

Manlius hath a very mean estate, 3398

Yet lives in longing hope of better fate;

He hath an vnkle above measure rich,

And cares not much if he lay dead i' th' ditch;

Hopes he cannot last long because hee's olde; 3402

And then he hopes to seaze vpon his golde.

Foole, how dost know *that* thou shalt him outlive?

'Twere better for thee, did he something give

A bird in the  
hand is worth  
two in the bush;  
and he who  
waits for dead  
men's shoes may  
go barefoot.

Now while thy wanttes desire reliefe; "one thrush 3406

I' th' hand is worth more then are two i' th' bush;"

And "he *that* hopes to put one dead mens shoos,

It often comes to passe he barefoote goes."

Elpinas, *which* with seas doth traffique holde, 3410

Hath made a ship out for West Indian golde,

And all his hopes doe in this venture lie:

<sup>1</sup> *Reveale* originally. The stroke over the second *e* is continued till it looks more like *j*—*Revjle*.

Should she miscarry sure *the* man would die;  
But hope, *which* holds him like a violent fever, 3414

Flatters him still he shalbe made for ever

At her returne; & since she first began

To cut *the* billowes of *the* ocean

With her swift keel, his minde, more swift then she,

Followes her in *the* voyage, & doth see 3419

With eyes of selfe-delighting fantasie

(*Which* sometime wrap him in an extasie)

Her prosperous traffique. If *the* day be faire 3422

He hopes *that* homeward she doth then repaire;

If stormes obscure *the* brightnesse of *the* skie,

He hopes she doth in safest harbour lie.

The time *which* slowlie seemes to passe away 3426

Vnto his longing hopes, he day by day

Telles o're in minutes; not a puffe of winde

Blowes, but *that* straight his advantageous minde

Carries it to his ship. Sometime his thought 3430

Runnes on *the* gold wherwith his ship is fraught,

Imagining in his still working braine,

How to imploy it to his best of gaine.

Thou greedy minded slave! whose hopes are fixd 3434

Only on wealth, with pleasure inte[r]mixt,

And ne're hop'st after heaven, how canst thou thinke

But *that* iust Iove should in *the* ocean sinke

All thy fond hopes, & drive thee to dispaire, 3438

*Which* ne're implorst his ayde by hearty praier?

Returne at last, and fix thy hopes one him,

Whose only power can make thee sink or swimme.

Alston, whose life hath been accounted evill, 3442

And therefore cal'de by many the blew devill,

S[t]ruck with remorse of his ill gotten pelfe,

Would in dispaire have made away himselfe,

One while by drowning, when *that* would not be, 3446

He drew his knife to worke his tragedie,

Intending with *that* fatall instrument

[leaf 88, back]  
The merchant is  
all anxiety about  
his ship.

He daily tells  
over the time for  
her return in  
minutes.

Sometimes he  
decides what to  
do with the gold  
she will bring  
home.

But his hopes  
may all be  
confounded!

Alston, in a fit of  
"blue devils,"  
would have com-  
mitted suicide,



To cut his owne throte. Fearfull punishment  
 Of a despairing minde! O, who can tell 3450  
 The pangs *that* in a guilty conscience dwell?  
 Had not *the* gracious mercy of *the* Lord  
 Restrained him from a sinne soe much abhord, 3453  
 With his owne handes he would have stopt his breath  
 And with his bodie sent his soule to death.  
 Thrice happie mortall, *which* this grace didst finde,  
 Soe *that* henceforth thou bear a better minde,  
 And let thy actions to his glorie tende 3458  
 That save thy life from such a fearfull end.  
 Returne thanksgiving, & desire in praier  
 His grace to sheild thee from forlorne dispaire.  
 [leaf 39] Latro did act a damnèd villanie, 3462  
 Adding blacke murder to his robbery,  
 Yet 'cause 'twas closely done he might conceale it,  
 For, save himselfe, none living could reveale it.  
 But see *the* iust revenge for this offence;— 3466  
 After *the* deed, his guilty conscience  
 Torturing his soule, enforc'd him still to think  
 The act disclosde, & he in dangers brinke. 3469  
 He thought *the* birds still in their language said it;  
 He thought *the* whistling of *the* winde bewraide it;  
 He cald to minde *that* murder was forbidden,  
 And though a while, it could not long be hidden.  
 Distract in minde, & fearfull in his place, 3474  
 Having noe power to call to God for grace,  
 The devill doth suborne him to dispaire,  
 Tells him 'tis pittie he should breath this aire  
 Which hath been such a villaine; thrusts him on 3478  
 To worke his owne death & confusion.  
 He, though he had *the* murderous hand to spill  
 Anothers blood, himselfe yet durst not kill,  
 And was afraide of others. What e're stirres 3482  
 He iudgeth to be men & officers  
 Come to attache him, & his sight vnstable

but God's mercy  
restrained him,

and saved him  
from such an  
end.

[leaf 39]  
Latro added  
murder to  
robbery,

but conscience

and the devil

made a coward  
of him,

Takes every bush to be a constable.<sup>1</sup>

Thus plagud & torturde with dispaire & feare, 3486

Out must *the* fact, he can noe more forbear; ;

For *which* according to *the* course of lawe

Deaths heavy sentence one him he doth drawe ;

And being brought vnto *the* place of death, 3490

There in dispaire yeildes vp his latest breath.

Thus each affection like a tyrant raignes

Over mans soule, *which* letteth loose *the* reines

Vnto selfe will, in *which* soe slavish state, 3494

Mans sence captivd'e, his reason subiugate,

Makes *the* soule clogd, a massie lump of sinne,

*Which* following his creation should have been

Like his Creator pure ;—soules were made free, 3498

Not to be held in base captivitie

By every passion, but with reasons bitte

To checke affections from all things vnfit.

He therefore *that* intends to live vpright

Let him in time curb hedstrong appetite. 3503

and he fears  
every bush is a  
constable;

till he yields  
himself to  
justice.

So every passion  
reigns over  
man's soul.

He that would  
live upright  
must curb his  
appetites.

<sup>1</sup> See 3 Hen. VI., v. 6.

## [Certaine Poems.]

---

### [PART II.]

[leaf 39, back]

Certaine Poems, comprising Things  
Naturall, Morrall, & Theologicall,  
written by R. C., Gent.

---

E dulci virus contractat aranea flore,  
Quando ex vrtica mella leguntur ape.

---

### Ad Lectorem.

---

I did not intend  
to place these  
Poems before  
you,

had not my  
friends per-  
suaded me to do  
so.

They were so  
suddenly put to  
press, that I

I had not thought (courteous reader) to have pretended thus conspicuously in thy sight this rude & indigested chaos of conceites (the abortive iss[u]e of my vnfertile braine) & to have set before thee this immature & vnpleasing fruit, collected only for my private recreation, & not for thy publique satisfaction & delight; but *the* vehement importunity & instigation of certaine friends, with whom I did communicate my moste private studies, prevailing above mine owne determination, enforced me (otherwise vnwilling) to commit this piece of poetry alsoe to thy curteous acceptaunce & kinde censure. It was soe sodainlie thrust into *the* presse, *that* I had noe competencie of

time, with *the* bear, to lick over this whealp, & with a more diligent *pervsall* to correct any easily overslipped errorr. Wherefore I desire thee, if thou finde any, to think it is rather a lapsus pennæ than an error<sup>1</sup> mentis. As for *the* crabbed & criticall interpretation of many, *that* would seeme moste iudicious Catoes, & yet are indeed most censorious coxcombes, I waigh it litle, and lesse *the* detracting speeches of barking Momists; & yet let them both know *that* it is easier to reprove then reforme, & a good word is as soone spoken as a bad. But least I seeme to begge their favours, or distrust mine owne fancies, I will leaue them as I found them, & returne to thee, gentle reader (because thou shalt be both *the* protasis & catastrophe of my epistle). If thou canst with *the* bee sucke honie out of this hemlock, I hope, when *the* garden of my wit shalbe throughly watered with *the* spring of Helicon, to present thee with flowers. In *the* meantime, thy present kinde acceptation of this wilbe a great animation to my subsequent endeavours.

pray you excuse errors.

As for judicious Catoes, I care but little.

If you, gentle reader, can suck honey from this hemlock, I may at a future time present you with flowers.

Farwell.

<sup>1</sup> errorr in MS.

## [Certaine Poems.]

## Vera quid hominis forma.

- [leaf 40] What makes a *perfect* man? My Muse declare.  
 External qualities  
 do not make a  
 perfect man. Externall qualities? Their force is much  
 I doe confesse; but beastes excell vs farre 3  
 In them; *our* stepdame Natures will is such,  
 The lions strength mans force doth overquell;  
 The hare in swiftnesse doth vs all excell. 6
- The brutes excel  
 him in senses. In senses likewise brutes doe vs exceed;  
 Hartes in quicke hearing, eagles in sharp sight;  
 Spiders in touching; apes when as they feed, 9  
 Have daintier palates to procure delight:  
 Tender-nosd houndes, & vultures, senting prey,  
 In smelling doe surpasse vs every waie. 12
- In his form,  
 man excels all  
 beasts. Neither doth mans essentiall forme consist  
 In lineaments of body well contr[i]vde;  
 Although heerin of force I must insist 15  
 He doth excell all beastes *that* ever livde;  
 Since beastes aspect is downeward as they passe,  
 And man *the* heavens hath for his looking-glasse. 18
- Wealth cannot  
 make him  
 perfect. What then? Doth wealth mans *perfect* forme compose?  
 Noe, though thy wealth doe Cœsus wealth exceed;  
 Though many miles thy land cannot enclose, 21  
 Though all things to thine owne desire succeed:  
 Yet this (if thou *the* matter rightly scanne)  
 Is of noe force to make *the* perfect man. 24

There is a soule, not generate, but infusde,  
 Immortall therfore, *which* conjoyntly knit  
 With [the] corriptible bodie, & diffusde 27  
 By vertue through each member, as is fit,  
 Informs each part, & animates *the* same,  
 And this mans true essentiall forme doth frame. 30

But his immortal  
 soul does.

### De quatuor anni partibus.

Apollo to his flaming carre adrest  
 Taking his dayly, never ceasing course,  
 His fiery head in Thetis watry brest,  
 Three hundred sixty & five times doth source :  
 As many times Aurora doth appear  
 Ere there be made a full & perfect year. 6

Apollo dips his  
 head into  
 Thetis' watery  
 3 breast 365 times.

This year equally doth it selfe distribute  
 Into 4 partes, *which* we doe quarters call,  
 Each having his peculiar attribute 9  
 Of name, & severall qualitie with all :  
 Spring ever plesaunt, Summer hot & dusty,  
 Fruit-ripening Autumne, Winter colde & frosty. 12

The year is  
 divided into  
 four parts :

Sweet smelling Spring, *that* ever chearfull season,  
 Clad with *the* verdure of fresh hearbes & flowers,  
 Renewes *the* year & makes it alwaies geason 15  
 By distillation of his fruitfull showers :  
 This quarter doth (for soe it is assignde)  
 Refresh *the* sence & recreate *the* minde. 18

[leaf 40, back]  
 Spring, clothed  
 with herbs and  
 flowers;

No sooner doth *the* blazing bright beamd starre,  
 Sol, enter Cancer *that* signe tropicall,  
 But Summer in his progresse doth declare  
 A hot ensuing season *that* must fall :

21 Summer, when  
 Ceres begins  
 harvest;

Now Ceres, goddessse of all corne & tillage,  
 Begins her harvest in each country village. 24  
 TIME'S W. 8

Autumn, when  
Bacchus treads  
the vine.

When day & night are in equalitie,  
Autumne doth then beginne his course to take,  
Whom aires temperate serenity 27  
A pleasaunt quarter evermore doth make :  
Now Bacchus treadeth<sup>1</sup> downe *the* fruitfull vine,  
And doth compose the spirit quickning wine. 30

Winter when  
nipping cold  
breeds disease.

When longest night doth make *the* shortest day,  
Frostie-facde Winter Autumne doth succede,  
In boysterous stormes his force he doth display, 33  
Whose nipping colde doth ofte diseases breed :  
Yet man to please this quarter doth present  
Domesticke sportes & homebred merriment. 36

### Planetarum energia.

Astronomers  
have found  
seven planets.

Astronomers, with their heaven searching eyes,  
Seven planets in their severall orbs have found,  
Whose influence, they say, descends the skies, 3  
And in our mortall bodies doe abound :  
Whose force is great, or else they greatlie lye  
That calculate mans fatall destinie. 6

The morose and  
melancholy are  
born under  
Saturn.

Saturn is mounted in the highest sphear,  
Vnder *which* planet if man life receive,  
He shalbe subject to dispairefull feare, 9  
Dull melancholy to his minde shall cleave :  
His stupid braine, his frowning looke, shall bear  
A crabbèd nature & a life austere. 12

The honoured and  
liberal under  
Jupiter.

Next vnto lumpish Saturn, sprightlie Iove  
Moves in his orbe. Who vnder his aspect  
Shall breathe this aire (*which* doth him mortall prove)  
He alwaies shalbe held in good respect :  
Pleasing his looke shalbe, comely his feature,  
Bounteous his minde, and ever kinde his nature. 18

<sup>1</sup> MS. treading.

- After Iove, Mars assumes his proper seat,  
Whom poets faine to be *the* god of warre ;  
That man in battell shall his foes defeate 21  
*Which vnder Mars is borne, that warlike starre :*  
He will (for of his nature hath been tride)  
Be quicklie angrie & soone pacifide. 24  
*Soldiers under Mars.*
- In midle of *the* planettes regiment,  
Bright Sol, that heauenlie ever burning lamp,  
Himselfe doth in his glorious orbe present. 27  
Who vnder him receives his native stampe,  
Shalbe well skild in artes, in conference wise,  
Religious in heart, in life precise. 30  
*The skilful and religious under the Sun.*
- After bright Sol, the beauteous queen of love  
Faire Citherean Venus takes her place :  
Who vnder her aspect is borne, shall prove 33  
Skilfull in love ; & with a blushlesse face  
He shall vnto his lawlesse lust allure  
Many that are of thoughts & life impure. 36  
*The skilful in love under Venus.*
- Next Venus, in his sphear is Maiaes sonne,  
Ioves messenger, wing-footed Mercurie :  
Who vnder his aspect his life begunne 39  
Shalbe endude with craft & subtilty ;  
He wilbe (soe his state thereby may mend)  
Apt to deceive even his most trusty friend. 42  
*The deceitful under Mercury.*
- Lowest of all *the* planets placèd is  
Selfe-chaunging Luna : vnder whose aspect  
If man be borne, he never shall have misse 45  
Of an inconstant heart, *which* doth detect  
A *p*erverse nature, & a peevisch minde :  
Vnder this starre are borne most women kinde. 48  
*Women under the Moon.*
- Every man hath his constellation  
Vnder one of these planets influence  
Every man has his star.



Stars rule man. Predominating, & *the* calculation 51  
 O[f] his ensuing fortunes comes from hence,  
 Be he to labour borne, to art, or warres :  
 Thus starres rule man, & God doth rule *the* starres.

## De quatuor elementis.

Earthly bodies  
 are composed of  
 the four elements.

Each sublunarie bodie is composit  
 Of *the* fower elementes, which are proposde  
 By Nature to *that* end, a worke t' admire  
 That aire should meet with earth, water with fire, 4  
 And in one bodie friendlie sympathize,  
 Being soe manifestlie contraries.

[leaf 41, back]  
 There are simple  
 elements,

These elements apparent to *the* eye  
 Are mixt, & not of simple puritie ; 8  
 Pure simple ones ther are, but wher they be  
 Passes *the* skill of our philosophie.

but where can  
 they be found ?

Wheither earths purer elementall part  
 Reside within Thessalian Tempes heart ; 12  
 Wheither Arabia Fœlix it containes,  
 Or Edens garden, or th' Elizian plaines ;  
 Olympus hill, or mountaine Appenine,  
 Our Albion heer, or fertill Palestine, 16  
 I rashly in opinion dare not enter.

Where purest  
 water ?

Who shall finde out earth[s] yet vnheard of center ?  
 Where purest water is, declare who can,  
 Whether in midst of *the* vast ocean, 20

In Tagus or in  
 Ganges ?

Or where rich Tagus workes vp golden sand ;  
 Whether in some clear rivolet on land,  
 As in *the* spring vpon Parnassus hill,  
 Where the nine Muses dip their learned quill ; 24  
 In silver Ganges, or that fountaine rather  
 Where faire Diana with her nymphs doth bath her ?

Where purest  
 air ?

Art thou perhaps *that* purest breathing aire,  
 Sweet Zephirus, which wontst to make repaire 28

To amorous Psyche, when for Cupids love,  
 She fearlesse lept downe from *the* rocke above.  
 If thou be *that* pure aire without all doubt,  
 Shew me thy dwelling, & I'll seeke thee out,  
 And having found thee, then my next desire  
 Shalbe for purest elementall fire ;

32

Having found air,  
 fire must next be  
 sought.

Be it within the moones concavity  
 Or above all the heavens convexity,  
 Doe it within *that* fornace closely lurke,  
 Where Vulcan & his Cyclopes doe worke,  
 Or be it *that* celestially fire above  
 Which wise Prometheus stole away from Iove.

36

But I leave these pure elements alone,  
 To speake of these amongst vs better knowne.

40

Each body takes  
 its existence from  
 the elements.

This quadruplicity, these elements,  
 From whom each body takes his existence,  
 Have qualities calde elementarie,  
 Knowne by *the* names of first & secundarie.  
 Earth is *the* driest in his first degree,  
 Then coldnesse is his second quality.

44

Coldest is water in first quality,  
 Then moysture is his second propertie.  
 Moistenesse in aire houldes principality,  
 And heat is secundarie quality.

48

And each has its  
 particular  
 quality,

Fire doth predominate in calidity.  
 And then *the* next degree is siccity.

52

Fire hot & dry, aire moyst & hot we call,  
 Seas colde & moist, earth dry & colde with all.

56

[leaf 42]  
 as hot and dry,  
 dry and cold.

These elements, although they doe agree  
 In *the* composure of mortalitie,  
 Yet in each body one it selfe doth vaunt,  
 And is above *the* rest predominant.

60

In man complexions plainly doe dilate  
 What element is moste predominate.

In cholerick bodies, fire doth govern moste ;  
 In sanguine, aire doth chiefly rule *the* rest ;

64

In cholerick bodies  
 is most fire ;

in phlegmatic  
most water.

In flegmatick, hath water greatest sway,  
Dull melancholy seemes to be of clay.

It is recorded by some antiquaries,  
Nor doe I see *that* it from truth much varies,  
That each before recited element  
Gives to a bruit his onlie nutriment.

68

I speake not this of those we purest call,  
For they, I know, cannot sustaine at all.

72

The mole lives in  
the earth, the  
herring in the sea.

The chameleon  
lives in air,  
the salamander in  
fire.

The earth vnto *the* mole her essence gives,  
The herring only in *the* water lives ;

Aire only *the* camelion doth suffice,  
And salamander from *the* fire dies.

76

To these 4 brutes, living in this estate,  
Fowre kindes of men we may assimilate.  
Like to *the* mole *the* worldly minded man  
Workes in *the* earth, as if he headlong ran  
Into her bowels ; for some paltry gaine,

80

Man searches the  
earth for gold.

He digs, & delves, & toicles himselfe with paine.  
His avaritious minde is wholly bent  
Vpon *the* purchase of this element ;  
Blind like *the* mole in 's intellectuall eye  
That should direct him to felicity.

84

The second kinde from water doth alone  
Produce his lifes best sustentation,

88

Pirates live by  
sea-robbery ;

And such are they *which* vse damnd piracie,  
And live vpon *the* sea by robberie,  
These with *the* herring make *the* sea their friend  
Till some of them at Wopping take their end.

92

Ambitious men doe one *the* ayer feed ;  
Like *the* camelion they are pleasde indeed  
With meer aeriall praise ; good wordes (I think)  
Fattens them better then their meat & drinke.  
Some of this kinde build castles in *the* aire,  
Thinking themselues instald in honours chaire  
In their selfe pleasing mindes, when such promotion  
Is as farre from them as they from devotion.

100

ambitious men  
on praise.

But they think soe ; & he should doe them wrong

[leaf 42, back]

That puts them by this their conceit soe strong.

Lust is *the* fire that doth maintaine the life

Lust consumes  
the life of the  
venerious.

Of the venereous man (but sets at strife

104

The soule & body). Did I say maintaine ?

I should haue saide consume, for soe 'tis plaine.

Yet can he live noe more without desire,

Then can the salamandra without fire.

108

### De quatuor virtutibus cardinalibus.

What may the reason be that we doe call

Our fower excellent vertues cardinal ?

Is it because Romes Cardinals moste vse them,

And other men doe more then they refuse them ?

4

No truely, for each severall vertue trie,

And you shall finde that they one few relie.

For wisdom first, what wisdom can ther be

In them, who, given superstitiouslie,

8

For the true God doe images adore,

And in necessity their healpe implore ?

Yet why should I their wisdom thus defie,

Whose crafty witt and dammed pollicie

12 Their policy is to  
enrich them-  
selves.

Is to enrich themselves, though their soules have

Perdition, whom true wisdom seekes to save ?

For iustice next, doth iustice with them live

Who absolution to each sinne doe give

16

For a corrupting bribe ? The sonne may kill

His aged parentes ; man the blood may spill

Of his deepe foe & 'scape ; for a large fee

Wrong shall take place, & right perverted be.

20

If these thinges we may iustice iustly call,

Iustice is vsde by every Cardinall.

But it may be in temperance they excell,

And therin doe all only bear the bell.

24

perhaps they do  
in temperance,

if to be Epicures  
is to be temperate;

If to be Epicures, and live at ease,  
Swallowing vp pleasures when & how they please,  
We doe account a temperat sober life,  
Then these are they we graunt withouten strife. 28

and chastity, if  
the keeping of  
concubines is  
chastity.

Their chastety is soe immaculate  
That they doe alwaies live in virgin state,  
Marriage they nill admitt by any meanes,  
Yet doe allowe of concubins & queanes. 32

[leaf 43]

Lastly to speake of manlie fortitude,  
Therin their calling shews them to be rude;  
Full ill (we know, & every man may see)  
A steely helme, & Cardinals cap agree; 36  
As for their fortitude of minde, 'tis small,

They are proud  
in power.

Proud in their height, dejected in their fall.  
I, but their power's great great; in oppression,  
Treading downe vertue, raising vp transgression. 40

They tread down  
virtue.

These are their cardinall vertues of choife fame,  
Which we may trulie cardinall vices name.  
But now at last a reason shew I shall,  
Why we these vertues doe name cardinall: 44

These vertues are  
called cardinal  
because they  
embrace all the  
rest.

Cardinall iustly may derived be  
From cardo, which a hinge doth signifie;  
Soe these 4 vertues, all the rest enfolde,  
Even as the hinges doe the dore vpholde. 48

Scilicet vt fulvum spectatur in ignibus  
aurum,

Tempore sic duro est inspicienda fides.

A rich young  
man to prove his  
friends

A certaine man which great possessions had,  
Had likewise store of friendes; as who's so mad  
To think that friendship doth not wealth pursue,  
Though for the moste part fained & vntrue? 4  
This man of wealth (though seld it soe be found  
In a young man) in iudgement did abound,

- And him bethought a way his friendes to trie,  
 How they would serve him in extremity. 8  
 He kills a calfe & ties him in a sacke, killed a calf, and  
 put it into a sack.  
 Whom vp he takes & carries one his backe ;  
 And then straightwaies vnto his friendes he goes,  
 And in this manner doth his minde disclose. 12  
 "My friendes," quoth he, "your loves I now must trie, He told his  
 friends he had  
 killed a man,  
 For friendes are truly prov'de in misery ;  
 Vnlesse your succours doe my life defend,  
 I am in danger of a shamefull end. 16  
 Knowe, in my rage I have slaine a man this day,  
 And knowe not where his body to conveigh  
 And hide it from the searchers inquisition, and wished them  
 to hide the body.  
 My house being subject to no mean suspition. 20  
 Healp me, good Sirs, in my distressed state,  
 Since thus to you my griefs I doe dilate."  
 "Depart," quoth they, "from vs, you are a stranger !  
 We mean not for your love to bring in danger 24  
 Our goodes & lives ; should we a murder hide  
 'Twould even by sencelesse creatures be descride.  
 Your friendship thus distainde with innocent blood They would have  
 nothing to do  
 with him in his  
 trouble.  
 We doe disclaime. While your estate was good, 28  
 And your selfe free from danger of the lawe,  
 The fatnesse of your purse had power to drawe  
 Our wealth-pursuing loves ; but you must knowe, [leaf 43, back]  
 Our friendships with your fortunes ebbe or flowe." 32  
 Thus severally he all his friendes did trie,  
 And had from them this or the like replie ;  
 At last he cals to minde a man of fashion,  
 With whom his father held much conversation 36  
 Whilome he livde, & oft had heard him praise  
 His friendship, prov'de in divers hard assaies. Then he tried his  
 "father's friend,"  
 To this as to the rest the young man hies,  
 And in like manner his fainde grieffe discries ; 40  
 He for his fathers sake, which was his friend,  
 Swears he will doe his best his life to shend.

	The body then he takes, & meanes to hide ; Vowes secrecie, what euer doe betide.	44
who at once promised to help him.	"And if," quoth he, "you 'le on my faith relie, I 'le keep you safe from the world searching eye, Vntill this gust of danger be o're blowne, Which threatens death, if that the fact be knowne."	
	The man reioycing in his friends firme love, Sayes how he did it but his faith to prove, "And now," quoth he, "by giving of false fire,	49
Having found a friend, he told him the trick.	I have found out the thing I doe desire, A faithfull friend, vpon whose trust I may My life, my landes, & all my substance lay."	52
A compact of never-dying friendship was made between the two.	Then vp & tels him all the project plaine, How the dead body was a calfe yslaine. The other, wondring at his pollicie, Resolvèd straight a knot wth him to tie Of never-dying friendship to their end, Thus each to other was a perfect friend. Mean while the other from him he removde, Whose fainèd love sufficientlie was prov'de.	56 60

## Somnium.

	About the dead time of the silent night, Disquiet thought debarring sounder sleepe, A dreame I had that did me much delight,	3
I had a dream about the choice of a wife.	Wherof my minde doth yet impression keepe, Because it chiefly touchèd single life, In good or bad election of a wife.	6
Three virgins introduced themselves to my notice.	Methought 3 virgins did appear vnto me, In their attyer all full seemly clad, Which saide they came on purpose for to wooe me, To know to which I moste affection had : "But first (said they) before this thing thou shew Thou each of vs shalt severally knowe."	9 12

- Then first gan say *the* fairest of the three,  
 "I Beawty am ; if me thou list to take,  
 Thy fancy shall receiue content in me,  
 And I will never thy true love forsake :  
     But I am poore, & have no meanes at all  
     Reliefe to give, if want should thee befall." 15
- The second then begann, "I Wealth am hight ;  
 If me thou chuse thou never shalt have lacke ;  
 Aboundance thee to give is in my might,  
 To fill thy belly, or to clothe thy backe :  
     Only I am (as thou maist well beholde)  
     Deformde, hard-favoured, crabbed, wrinkled, olde." 18
- Then quoth the third & last, "My name is Witt ;  
 If me thou chuse to give thy minde content,  
 I can discourse, with wordes moste apt & fitt,  
 Of nature, heaven, & every element :  
     But this be sure, a wanton I will prove,  
     And not be tyed vnto on[e] only love." 21
- "And now," quoth they, "thine answeare we request,  
 For we of purpose come the same to knowe ;  
 Tell whether of vs thou canst fancy best."— 27
- And heer me thought they left to speake ; when loe !  
     I framèd me an answer them to make,  
     But forc'd my selfe, & thus I did awake. 30
- [leaf 44]  
 Beauty was poor  
 and faithful.  
 Wealth promised  
 plenty,  
 but she was ugly  
 and deformed.  
 Wit was pleasing,  
 but wanton.  
 I awoke before I  
 made up my  
 mind.

### Brevis Allegoria.

- Out from the depth<sup>1</sup> of Griefes infernall cave  
 Sad Melancholie rose with weeping eyes ;  
 Company had she none, ne would she have,  
 But ne're pleasd Discontent, with whom she hies 4  
     With as swift feet as Griefe to her had lent,  
     Vnto *the* surging billowes of Lament,  
 To be washt<sup>2</sup> o're into *the* desert Languishment. 7

<sup>1</sup> MS. depht.<sup>2</sup> MS. waste.

Melancholy and  
 Discontent  
 proceed from  
 Grief.



Despair is their  
Ferryman over  
Lament.

The ferriman, or boatswaine of *the lake*,  
Incredulous, all doubting, hight Dispaire,  
Would none conduct *that* did not ayre forsake  
To draw *the* breath of *that* halfe killing ayre 11  
Issuing from Hope, his still professèd foe,  
Which makes men constant in abiding woe,  
Expecting still at length their trouble to forgoe. 14

The boat was a  
fearful hulke,

The boat wherin this Ferriman of hell  
Dischargde his office, was a fearfull hulke  
Framd' of a guilty conscience (worst of ill); 17  
The sailes composit of sinne, whose monstrous bulke  
Swelling with sighs, which were *the* gales of winde  
Made *the* barke seeme to flie; a fearfull minde 20  
Was the maine-mast, & doubt for anchor was assignde.

[leaf 44, back]  
in which  
passengers are  
carried

Thus rigd & trimd, it floteth vp & downe,  
To ferry passengers vnto *the* shore  
Of *that* inhospitable desert, where no towne,  
Ne humane wight inhabited of yore; 25  
Yet gins it now with people to abound,  
Which daylie passe o're to *that* hatefull ground,  
Although they know it will at length them quite con-  
found. 28

to the shores  
of death.

For whie, within that desert lyes a cave,  
Where horrid Murder, Death[s] sterne sire, doth dwell;  
Him that Dispaire doth hither bring, this slave  
Doth straight encounter, leads him to his cell, 32  
Presenting him with cordes to stop his breath,  
Poyson to kill him, or else doth vnsheath  
Swordes, ponyards, knives, all instruments of cursèd  
death. 35

Hope met  
Melancholy on  
her way and  
cheered her up

As Melancholie posted to the shore,  
To be conducted to this balefull place,  
Hope met with her & never gave her o're,  
Till she had staide her rash vnsteady pace. 39

And with wise wordes, diverting her intent  
 From seeking out *the* desert Languishment,  
 At last she brought her to *the* house of Merriment. 42

with wise words.

### De Fortuna.

Well have the poetes fainde the queen of chance,  
 Dame Fortune, blinde, & fixd vpon a wheele,  
 The swiftnesse of whose motion may entrance  
 A dull spectatours eye ; at whose feet kneele  
 Great potentates, & kinges that sue for grace,  
 Whom as she list she spurns or doth embrace. 6

The poets  
 represent  
 Fortune  
 as blind and  
 3 fixed on a wheel.

Sometimes she rayseth to emperiall throne  
 An abject peasant & base cuntry swaine,  
 Who from *the* ycie to the torrid zone 9  
 Boundeth *the* frontiers of monarchall raigne :  
 Then downe she thrustes from their supernall seat  
 Princes & kings, & makes them begg their meat. 12

Sometimes she  
 raises a beggar to  
 the throne.

O could she see, she would not be soe mad  
 (As now she is) in honour to aduance  
 (Vertue despisde, & art but meanlie clad) 15  
 Vnmatchèd vice, & worthlesse ignoraunce :  
 But blinde she is, & seeth no mans fall ;  
 Deafe, & can harken vnto no mans call. 18

Could she see she  
 would not  
 promote the  
 vicious.

### Homo Arbor.

Like as a tree from forth *the* earth doth spring,  
 So from *the* earth doth man his essence take ;<sup>1</sup>  
 The tree shootes forth & doth faire blossoms bring, 3  
 So man, till youth his mansion doth forsake :  
 The tree growing crooked, if you 'l have it mended,  
 Whilst that it is a twigg it must be bended. 6

As a tree springs  
 from earth, so  
 man takes his  
 essence from it.

<sup>1</sup> *Secundum corpus* written at the end of this line in the MS.

- [leaf 45]  
 "Just as the  
 twig is bent the  
 tree's inclined."  
 Right soe it fares with man, whose infant age  
 Is apt of any forme to take impression,  
 Following advice & reason or else rage, 9  
 According as his youths frame takes succession :  
 If green he be not bended, but let grow,  
 When he is olde hee 'l breake before hee 'l bowe. 12
- In spring trees  
 put forth  
 leaves ;  
 so man, and  
 both die for want  
 of nourishment.  
 When lusty Ver approcheth, he doth bring  
 Fresh vigour to the tree & liveries gay ;  
 Soe man doth reassume new health i' th' spring ; 15  
 The tree when moysture failes will fade away :  
 And man will quickly perish like a plant,  
 If he that *humidum radicale* want. 18
- The tree falls at  
 last ; and as it  
 falls so it lies.  
 Looke how at length the tree to ground doth fall,  
 Though long it stand fast fixèd in the earth ;  
 Soe man, thoug[h] long he live, yet die he shall ; 21  
 No helpe there is in honour, wealth, or birth :  
 The tree what way it falls, that way doth lye ;  
 Even so shall man be iudge as he doth die. 24
- 

### Mundus Theatrum.

- The world is by  
 some compared to  
 a theatre, the  
 gods being  
 spectators, men  
 the players.  
 The world by some, & that not much amisse,  
 Vnto a Theater comparèd is,  
 Vpon which stage the goddes spectatours sitt,  
 And mortals act their partes as best doth fitt. 4  
 One acts a king, another a poore swaine ;  
 One idely lives, another taketh paine ;  
 One, like Orestes, becomes mad with rage,  
 Another seeks his furie to asswage. 8  
 And as i' th' play that man which acts the king,  
 (Though many he to his obeisaunce bring)  
 I' th' end is of no more account then he,  
 Which represents the beggers misery, 12
- In the end he  
 who plays king  
 and he who acts

So is't i' th' world, when every man by death  
 Has his last exit, *which* doth stop his breath.  
 The king for all his crowne shall reape noe grace,  
 Nor beggers meannesse shall his cause embase. 16

the beggar are  
 alike

But to my thinking, in this saide compare,  
 Though many iump, yet some things differing are.  
 In our stage-plaies ther 's but one foole at most  
 And sometimes none at all ; we cannot boast 20  
 So much, farre otherwise with vs it is ;  
 We act *the* same part all, not one doth misse.  
 They shew awhile in iest their foppery,  
 We still in seriousnesse our foolery. 24

In plays there 's  
 only one fool, in  
 the world many.

### Armat spina rosas.

Hard is it for *the* patient *which* is ill,  
 Fulsome or bitter potions to digest,  
 Yet must he swallow many a bitter pill, 3  
 E're he regaine his former health & rest :  
 To keep the body safe is mans desire,  
 Though it be done through water, sword, & fire. 6

Physic is bitter,  
 but man must  
 keep himself in  
 health.

[leaf 45, back]

The hardy soldier, with death-threatning sword,  
 To kill his hostile enemy procures,  
 In hope the conquest will rich spoiles afford, 9  
 He mortall strokes & bloody woundes endures :  
 Victorious triumph ther doth never grow,  
 But by the adverse parties overthroe. 12

The soldier  
 endures wounds,  
 hoping for  
 conquest.

The silly bee his hony doth defend,  
 And from his hive doth chase the drone away ;  
 Yea oftentimes with man it doth contend 15  
 And 'gainst him doth his threatning sting display :  
 Loth is it his mellifuous meat forgoe,  
 Which with such paine it gathers too & free. 18

The bee protects  
 its honey with  
 its sting.

The rose is  
fenced about  
with thorns.

The odoriferous & fragrant rose,  
Which in the spring tide shewes his blushing hiewe,  
For fence it selfe with prickes doth round enclose, 21  
Which make the gatherer oftentimes to rue,  
And wish, with his prickt fingers making mone,  
That he had let *the* verdant rose alone. 24

The lover under-  
goes many  
hardships.

T[h]e amorous lover, ere he can enioy  
His wishèd end, doth many paines endure ;  
Sometime his love disdainfull is & coy, 27  
And will not stoop vnto his gentle lure ;  
Sometime he feares she will vnconstant prove,  
And not reward him faithfull love for love. 30

Things valuable  
are difficult of  
attainment.

Straight is *the* passage vertue to attaine,  
And steep the hill that vnto honour leads ;  
Art is not had without industrious paine, 33  
Nor wealth possest by praying vpon beads :  
Things of great prise are not atchiev'de with ease,  
But once attaind, they doe for ever please. 36

### Comparatio mortis & Hyenæ.

The hyena has  
the shape of  
several beasts.

A monstrous beast ther is Hyena namde,  
Whose shape of sundry formes composèd is ;  
Like to a wolfe her visage is iframde, 3  
A vipers swelling neck she hath, I wis ;  
An elepha[n]ts huge backe, voice like a man,  
And Proteous-like, transforme her selfe she can. 6

Death is like it  
in many respects.

Death like this monster is in each respect :  
First like a wolfe that ravenous is of prey,  
Whose very looke his rapine doth detect, 9  
Ne spareth he ought commeth in his way ;  
So death is cruell, suffering none escape ;  
Olde, young, rich, poore, of all he makes his rape. 12

- Next as a viper swelleth on *the* ground, [leaf 46]  
 And glideth to & fro to many a place,  
 Yet wher he was no print there can be found, 15  
 So nimble is he & so quick of pace;  
 Soe death is heer & yonder in one stound, Death is subtle as  
a viper:  
 And kills & sleas, yet no man sees him wound. 18
- The elephant in strength to him doth yeild, strong like  
the elephant;  
 Though he 'mongst beastes the strongest be accounted,  
 And castles carries on his back in field, 21  
 Where fighting men, as on a tower mounted,  
 Safeguard themselves & doe their foes annoy;  
 But death whole townes & countries doth destroy. 24
- A man he is in craft & pollicy,  
 Lurking full closely to devour his prey;  
 So death is full of craft & subtilty, 27 crafty as man,  
 And vnawares doth many take away;  
 As with sweet sleep he closeth oft the sight,  
 Yet shuttes the eyes in an eternall night. 30
- Lastly as Proteus into sundry shapes and can trans-  
form himself  
like Proteus.  
 (When as him list himselfe transforme) could change,  
 Or male or female he could be perhaps 33  
 Nor male nor female; soe doth death estrange  
 Himselfe into each sexe when as him will,  
 That is, both male & female he can kill. 36

### Vesper exornat diem.

- What profits it the well built ship to ride  
 Vpon the surging billowes of the maine,  
 Drive with a pleasant gale & a calme tide, 3  
 If, ere it iornies end it doth attaine,  
 By boysterous stormes, which cannot be withstood,  
 Sea wrackt it perish in the raging floud? 6  
 TIME'S W. 9
- What good is it  
for a ship to  
have a prosperous  
voyage, if it is  
wrecked in the  
end?

The old wife's  
medicine cannot  
cure grief.

The learned *artistes* much admired skill  
In life-preserving phisicke is then tride,  
When some strange cure is wrought; not every pill 9  
Or olde wifes medecine to the sick applide  
Can griepe recure; 'tis arts all knowing lore  
Must man vnto his wonted health restore. 12

He who has  
fought and  
conquered may  
claim the crown.

He that with trenchaunt blade in bloody fight,  
Singlie opposde, & clad in equal armes,  
Hath slaine his foe, or forced him vnto flight, 15  
Vsing noe witch-craft, sorcery, nor charmes,  
May worthely crowne his victorious brow  
With oken leaves of Ioves tryumphant bow. 18

[leaf 46, back]

The result  
praises or  
dispraises every  
man's work.

Who truely can affirme the day will prove  
Pleasant & faire, e're even doth appeare,  
When sodeinly<sup>1</sup> o'recast, the heauens remove 21  
Oft times their beawty *which* our sight doth chear;  
\*Successe by the event is knowne, the end  
Doth every action praise, or discommend.<sup>2</sup> 24

### Virtus persequenda.

He who pursues  
virtue in youth  
shall be famous  
in age.

He that in youth doth vertues path way tread,  
When age vpon his wrinkled front shall sitt,  
A crowne of honour shall enguirt his head, 3  
And though he dye, his praise shall never flitt:  
With her shrill trumpet never dying Fame,  
Vnto the world shall still resound his name. 6

He that despises  
virtue shall be  
forgotten,

But he that vertue in his youth disdaines,  
And like a lozell runneth out his race,

<sup>1</sup> I cannot tell whether this was intended to be *sodeinly* or *sodainly*. The MS looks more like *sodainly*.

<sup>2</sup> \*——Careat successibus opto

Quisquis ab eventu facta notanda putat.

Written in the margin of the MS, with the asterisk as above.  
Ovid. Epp. 2. 86.

Shame & not honour in his age attaines, 9  
 And after death on earth shall have noe place :  
 Lethe shall drowne his ill deserving name,  
 But vertuous acts are still enrolde by Fame. 12

and drowned by  
 Lethe.

### Cur Venus orta mari.

The poetes faine (for soe I know I read)  
 That Venus of the seas white foame was bred,  
 And therefore Aphrodite doe her call,  
 Which name doth signifie as much to all 4  
 That know the word ; but wherfore she should be  
 Derivèd from the froath of Neptunes sea  
 I know noe reason, since, as I doe gather,  
 Neptune her vnckle was & not her father ; 8  
 Vnlesse that we, against true logicks lawes,  
 From the effect produce th' efficient cause ;  
 And that too by comparison must be  
 As thus :—we all know that the foaming sea 12  
 Is salt & bitter to our tasting sence ;  
 So lustfull Venus, which is saide from thence  
 To issue forth, proves salt & bitter still,  
 To them that follow her disordered will. 16

Venus, they say,  
 was born of the  
 sea-foam.

Perhaps so: we  
 all know how  
 bitter her  
 followers find  
 her.

### Medio tutissimus ibis.

Climenes brat, aspiring Phaëton,  
 Dryving the fierie horses of the sunne  
 Out of the midle way, vp to the seat  
 Of Iupiter, & scorching with the heat  
 Of his bright flaming charriot all the goddes,  
 Was by incensèd Love whipt downe with roddes  
 Of thundering lightning to the raging wave  
 O' the vast ocean, his vntimely grave. 8

When Phaeton  
 drove the chariot  
 of the Sun

4 Jupiter sent him  
 headlong into the  
 sea.

[leaf 47]



Icarus, soaring  
too high, fell into  
the sea.

Fond Icarus, proud of his waxen wings  
Soaring to high, is drenchèd in the maine,  
When Dædalus his plumèd bodie brings  
Safe to the shore. Ambition is a traine 12  
That life entraps ; a golden mean the way  
To live securely ; for we often see  
Men of most honor soonest doe decay,  
When meaner men live in tranquillity. 16  
Wilt thou be safe ? strive not to climbe at all ;  
Low shrubs stand fast, when statelier okes doe fall.

If you would not  
fall, don't climb.

### Scribimus indocti doctique epigrammata passim.<sup>1</sup>

Jonson, they say,  
has turnèd  
Epigrammatist.  
I don't believe it.

Johnson they say's turnèd Epigrammatist,  
Soe think not I, believe it they that list.  
Peruse his booke, thou shalt not find a dram  
Of witt befitting a true Epigram. 4  
Perhaps some scraps of play-bookes thou maist see,  
Collected heer & there confusedlie,  
Which piece his broken stuffe ; if thou but note,  
Iust like soe many patches on a cote. 8  
And yet his intret Cato sta[n]ds before,  
Even at the portall of his pamphlets dore ;  
As who should say, this booke is fit for none  
But Catoes, learned men, to looke vpon : 12  
Or else, let Cato censure if he will,  
My booke deserves the best of iudgement still.<sup>2</sup>  
When every gull may see his booke's vntwitten,  
And Epigrams as bad as e're were written. 16  
Johnson, this worke thy other doth distaine,  
And makes the world imagine that thy vein

He has put Cato  
at the beginning  
of his booke!

The epigrams are  
as bad as any  
written.

<sup>1</sup> Scribimus indocti doctique poemata passim.

Hor. Ep. ii. 1, 117.

<sup>2</sup> *skill* in MS.—? iudgement[s] skill.

Is not true bred but of some bastard race.

Then write no more, or write with better grace ;

Turne thee to plaies, & therein write thy fill ;

Leave Epigrams to artists of more skill.

20 He had better  
confine himself  
to plays and  
leave Epigrams  
22 to better men.

### In Madamam quandam.

A country lasse of silly parents bred,

In London was for service entertainde,

And being of a wealthy master sped

She with her luring lookes so farre him trainde,

That he embrac'd her in a marriage bed,

But first she pawnd to him her maydenhead.

A country lass  
induced her rich  
master to marry  
3 her.

What plottes she had, what tricks she then did vse,

To bring her matter to soe good effect,

I list not now repeat ; lest for the stewes

New stratagems I plainlie doe detect :

But such they were, that from a scullians life

Made her a wealthy marcheantes second wife.

[leaf 47, back]  
Her contrivances  
to bring this  
9 about need not be  
named.

Then gan she trip it prouddie one the toe,

And mince it finely vpon London streetes.

She lady-like in her attire did goe,

Bought with the purchase of vnlawfull sheets ;

At last, her of her husband death bereft,

Who dying, her a wealthy widow left.

Then she tripped  
it finely till he  
died.

Ambition now began to swell her minde,

All her desire was to be ladihide ;

And with a knight at len[g]th she was combinde,

Which made her think herselfe halfe deifide :

But well she might, in Edens plot she lies,

And all men know that place is paradise.

21 Afterwards she  
was married to a  
knight.

Long liv'de she not in Edens fruitfull soile,

For her aspiring minde straight drave her thence ;

24

But pride ruined her.      That serpent pride did her soe far beguile,      27  
 Eden she banisht was for her offence :  
     Iudge, was not woman very much vnwise  
     That thus by pride hath twice lost paradise?      30

---

### In Neandrem.<sup>1</sup>

Neander, held a great cevillian  
 (Let me not say a Machiavillian)  
 Appointed to dispute before the king,  
 Struck mute with fear, could not say anything      4  
 Save 'twas ill luck ; for if he had done well,  
 As we expected he would bear the bell  
 From the whole Academie for the test,  
 'Tis certaine he had been a knight a[t] lest,      8  
 And made his wife (what she hath lookt for long)  
 A Madame. Fortune, thou hast done her wrong  
 To hinder his once dubbing of his wife,  
 Which hath dubde him soe often in her life.      12

---

### In Asinium.

Assinus what I speake straight overhears ;  
 Will you know why? Asses have longest eares.

---

[leaf 48]

### In Balbutiam.<sup>2</sup>

Balbutia has induced a  
 gentleman to leave his wife and  
 family for her,  
 Balbutia, which hath all the tricks of art  
 That doe belong vnto a whorish part,  
 Wholly bewitchd a gentleman to leave  
 His wife & children vnto her to cleave      4

<sup>1</sup> This and the next poem but one have been so thoroughly obliterated by means of a thick pen that at first I was tempted to omit them. I have been at some pains to read them, but I am by no means sure that my readings are absolutely correct.

<sup>2</sup> I cannot ascertain whether this was Balbutia or Balbutia. I am more inclined to think the former.

Even to his end, &, though God did him blesse  
 With a faire issue, clean to dispossesse  
 His children of his goodes & give her all  
 By his last dying testimoniall.  
 But how dost thrive with her? Exceeding well;  
 She is the likelyst still to goe to hell.  
 But heer she doth not without crosses goe,  
 Those in her children, sonnes & daughters too.  
 Her eldest sonne is hand or drownd i' th' seas,  
 Her other is as good in forwardnesse.  
 Her eldest daughter's married to her grieve,  
 Whose husband lives a prisoner & a theefe.  
 Her other daughters would fain married be,  
 But moste that knowe doe hate this progenie.  
 Thus she *which* made mothers fare *the* worse  
 In her owne seed hath this deservèd curse.

and give her his  
 property.

8

How does she  
 prosper?

12

Her eldest son is  
 hanged or  
 drowned.

16

Her eldest  
 daughter is  
 married to a  
 thief.

20

### In adulantes Aulicos.

Base sycophantes, crumbe-catching parasites,  
 Obsequious slaves, *which* bend at every nod;  
 Insatiate harpies, gormandizing kites,  
 Epicures, at[h]eists, *which* adore no God  
 But your owne bellies & your private gaine,  
 Got by your oily tongues bewitching traine!

Sycophants,

3 harpies, kites,  
 epicures,

6

O how my Muse, armde with Rhamnusiaes whip,  
 Desires to scourge your hell<sup>1</sup>-bred villanie,  
 And with Astræas sharp edged sword t' vnrip  
 The hatefull cloke of your deformity;

how my Muse  
 desires to scourge  
 you!

9

Whose naked view soe odious would appear,  
 That we should hate what now is held full deare.

Your sly deceits dissimulation hides,  
 Your false intent faire wordes obnubilate;

Your deceits hide  
 dissimulation,

<sup>1</sup> tell in MS.

- as grass hides  
serpents.      So 'mongst the greenest grasse the serpent glides,      15  
And freshest flowers foule toades coinquinate :  
All is not golde that hath a glistering hiew,  
But what the touchstone tries & findeth true.      18
- You cause  
dissensions  
between friends.      Dissentions, & twixt friends vnfriendly jarres,  
Your base tale-carr[y]ing tongues doe sett abroch,  
Intestine broyles, cyvill vncivill warres,      21
- [leaf 48, back]      Which end in death or infamous reproch,  
Are causd' by your insinuating wordes,  
Whose poysnous breath wounds deeper then keen  
swordes.      24
- Leave the Court,  
and no longer  
flatter greatness.      Avaunt, ye fauning cures, & leave *the* Court !  
Flatter not greatnesse with your scurrill praise.  
Dare flies approach where eagles doe resort ?      27  
And shall the cuckoe in [a] cove[r]t<sup>1</sup> chaunt his laies ?  
For ye, like cuckoes, all one note doe sing,  
And like to flies doe buzze about our king.      30
- The king scorns  
the whole of you.      But he, the princely Eagle, scornes such flies,  
Such butter-flies, such gnates, whose humming sound  
Relisheth not his eare ; nor doe his eyes      33  
Affect your gaudy outside, *which* abound  
More in quaint speach & gorgeous attire,  
Then in your loves, *which* ought to be entyre.      36
- Leave off your  
flattery.      Ye Aristippian zanies, Albions ill,  
Leave off at last your poysning honnied speach ;  
Let not your sugred wordes be traines to kill,      39  
Iust like *the* foxe when he to geese doth preach :  
And ye rich men, *which* selfe-conceit doe love,  
Be not such geese, foxe-flattering praise to prove.      42
- And you rich  
men, remember  
Æsop's crow      So Æsops crow whom crafty rainard spide  
With prey in bill, was earst by him deceivde ;

<sup>1</sup> ? For *Court*.

"O thou faire bird" (a lowd lie!) then he cride, 45 which was  
 "Why singst thou not, whose musick hath bereavd deceived by the  
 The nightingale of that respect she held, crafty fox  
 Since thy sweet voice a sweeter note doth yield?" 48

The silly crow, bewitchd with flattering praise,  
 Addrest herselfe to give the foxe a song,  
 When opening wide her bill to chaunt her laies, 51  
 Downe fell the prey she held! The foxe ere long  
 It quite devoured had, gan her deride;  
 Then, all too late, his cunning she espide. 54 and cheated out  
 of her prey.

Such crowes are they whom flatterers beguile;  
 Such foxes they which flatter, faune, & cog:  
 Brittans, let them no more sucke vp your oyle; 57 Men beguiled by  
 Be Aesops crow noe more, but Aesops dog. flatterers are just  
 Chace hence these foxes, which at your mercy stand, like this crow.  
 For our then happy made Eutopian land. 60

### Somnium.

About that time when as the chearfull spring  
 Bedeckes the earth with her sweet smelling flowers,  
 When pretty birds with their sweet caroling, 3  
 Record their ditties in Silvanus bowers,  
 I fortune, envited by the aire,  
 Vnto a pleasant grove to make repaire. 6 In the spring I  
 wandered into a  
 grove,

Quite through the thicket ran a pleasant spring, [leaf 49]  
 Whose gentle gliding a sweet murmure made;  
 The place (sufficient to content a king) 9  
 Allurde me to repose vnder the shade  
 Of a broad beech, the aptnesse of which seat  
 Preservde me from the sunnes annoying heat. 12 and sat down  
 under a broad  
 beech,

Not many minutes did I there repose,  
 Ere gentle Morpheus, powerfull god of sleep,

- where I soon  
fell asleep,  
With his compelling charmes mine eyes did close. 15  
Such harmony the chirping birdes did keep  
Coniointly with the sweetly warbling streame,  
That my long slumber did begett this dreame : 18
- and dreamed an  
amazing dream.  
Me thought it was about the dead of night,  
What time there was presented to my view  
A spectacle that did me much affright, 21  
And all my sences in amazement drew ;  
Till manly courage, putting fear to flight,  
Made me expect the issue of the sight. 24
- A woman  
appeared to me in  
costly robes and  
crowned.  
The fearfull obiect of my wandring eye,  
In shew appeard to be a womans shape ;  
Her looke was heavy, & did well descrie 27  
She had been subiect to noe mean mishappe :  
Her robes were costly, crownèd was her head,  
Which did foretell she was not basely bred. 30
- In one hand a  
sword, in the  
other she held a  
torch.  
One of her handes a bloody sword did graspe,  
Wherwith had been transfixd her tender heart ;  
The other hand a burning torch did claspe, 33  
By light wherof I might descrie each part  
Of her well featured body, whose sad plight  
Drew forth salt teares from my relenting sight. 36
- I would have  
questioned her,  
but was too  
frightened.  
I would have questiond whence, or who, she was,  
But admiration such amasement bred,  
That not one word from forth my lips could passe, 39  
My voice had lost his office & was dead,—  
Buried in silence lay ; when loe, ere long  
The apparition thus let lose her tongue :— 42
- She spoke and  
commanded me  
to listen.  
“ Young man ” (quoth she) “ thy spirites recollect ;  
Be not amazde mine vncouth shape to see ;  
Such peevish fear doth shew a minde deiect, 45  
Or guilty conscience, which are farre from thee :  
Give ear vnto me, & I will relate  
A true sad story of my passèd fate. 48

"I am by birth of most divine descent ;  
For I am daughter to immortall Iove,  
From whom into the world I first was sent  
As witnesse of his reconciled love

51 She said she was  
the daughter of  
Iove, True  
Religion by  
name.

With mortall man ; for *which* effect I came  
From heaven, & True Religion is my name.

54

"First went I to the vnbeleeving Iewes ;  
But there I could smale entertainment finde :  
The greater part did vtterlie refuse  
To lodge me in their heartes, & wilfull blinde  
Did cast me from them ; though alone by me  
Man can attaine to true felicity.

[leaf 49, back]  
She went first to  
the Jews, who  
refused her.

57

60

"By them reiected thus, I did intend  
Vnto the Gentiles next to bend my course,  
To see if they would greater favour lend :  
With these I had indeed somewhat great force,  
And purchasde a large kingdome with this crowne,  
Till *the* ten persecutions put me downe.

63 Then to the  
Gentiles, who  
listened to her.

66

"But noe oppression could me quite suppress ;  
Nay, persecutions made me flourish more ;  
I still was slaine, yet still I did increase,  
And growing lesse, grew greater then before :  
Cammomill trodden doth the farther spred,  
And the palme prest, the higher lifts his head.

No oppressions  
could put her  
down.

69

72

"Rome was of yore my place of residence,  
Where as a soveraigne I long time did sitt,  
Till antichristian prelats drave me thence ;  
Then did I flie to Brittain, & in it  
I have till now, & ever will remaine,  
Till the world shall to chaos turne againe.

75 She was driven  
from Rome to  
Britain,

78

"With this sharp sword, *which* in my hand I holde,  
A cruell Lady peared me to the heart ;  
The wound is fresh to see, the blood scarce colde,—  
Her name was Mary that did act this parte :

where Mary  
pierced her to the  
heart.

81



But e're she kilde me she was slaine by death,  
And I revivd'e by young Elizabeth. 84

But Elizabeth  
revived her.

"Forty-fower yeares this far renowned queen,  
Honord of all, me above all did honor ;  
But fates her, graie in yeares, in vertues green, 87  
Cald to a worthier place, death seazd vpon her,  
And for this world, *which* nought but sorrow yeilds,  
Carried Eliza to th' Elizian fields. 90

Afterwards came  
the "good  
Josiah," James I.,

"After her death the good Iosiah came,  
When the land feard some sodaine innovation,  
And, for the propagation of my name, 93  
Contracts a league with many a neighbour nation ;  
Wisely foreseeing that by such a peace,  
My crowne should flourish & my power encrease. 96

[leaf 50]  
under whom  
she rules Britain  
in spite of Rome.

"Vnder this monarch, or above him, rather,  
I rule this Britaine Empire & doe bring  
Many a soule vnto my heavenly Father, 99  
In spite of Rome, *which* for me hates the king :  
But God will blesse him, & vnto *the* end  
He and his issue shall my cause defend. 102

The torch she  
carries is to  
disperse the  
mists of error.

"If thou wouldst know whie this bright burning light  
Mine other hand doth bear, I will thee tell ;  
I have an enimie as darke as night, 105  
Cald Error (I to heaven, she leades to hell)  
Whose blacknesse to obscure me doth endeavour,  
But that this light doth her false mists dissever. 108

She looks down-  
cast because of  
the hypocrisy

"The reason why I looke thus heavily,  
Is 'cause of late my power gins decay ;  
That hellish monster, damnd hypocrisy, 111  
Doth carry in the land far greater sway ;  
Enters my temples &, in spite of me,  
Vsurps my place & titles soveraigntie. 114

- "There is a sort of purest seeming men,  
 That aide this monster in her wrongfull cause,  
 Those the world nameth—Puritanes I meane— 117 of the sancti-  
 Sent to supplant me from the very iawes monious  
 Of hell, I think ; by whose apparant shew Puritans,  
 Of sanctity doe greatest evils grow. 120
- "Vnless the hand of wise authority  
 Doe reinstall me in my former place,  
 And punish them & their hypocrisie, 123 who must be put  
 They will ere long mine honour quite deface. down.  
 And so I prethee, tell him gentle youth,—  
 Be not afraide, 'tis nothing but the truth." 126
- This saide, methought she vanishd from my sight,  
 And left me much perplexèd in my thought.  
 I musde a Puritan should be a wight 129 Then she  
 So seeming good, & yet soe passing naught ; awoke,  
 Till thinking long vpon so strange a theame,  
 At last I wakd, & then I writ my dreame. 132

### In curiosos theologos.

- You high aspiring wittes, *which* seeke to prie  
 Into the secretes of the Diety,  
 Is 't not enough to know his will reveald,  
 But you must aime at that *which* is conceald ? 4 Is it not enough  
 By curious inquisition, too much light to know what is  
 Hath made you lose the perfect vse of sight. revealed, but  
*Saint* Austines saying may you well befit, some would know  
 Which vnto one would know (without all witt) 8 the Divine  
 By curious interrogation, secrets ?  
 What God did ere he layd the worldes foundation,  
 Replide, "I think, or rather know full well,  
 He made for such as thee infernall hell." 12

[leaf 50, back]

Remember the  
 saying of  
 Augustine to one  
 of these in-  
 quisitors.

Hell is the place  
for them.

A place most meet for them that dare adventure  
Into Godes secret cabbinet to enter.

O, strive not then to know his secret will,  
Which art can never compasse with her skill! 16

### Gratia peccatum superat.

I soar to the  
throne of grace,

Mounted on winges of high aspiring thought,

I soare a loft vp to the throne of grace ;

My heartes repent, by true contrition wrought,

I there present before th' Almightyes face. 4

and there seek  
pardon of my  
sins.

The spotlesse Lambe which for my guilt was slaine,

I offer vp a ransome for my sinne ;

With sighs, praiers, teares, I begge release of paine,

Of him that ever mercifull hath been. 8

My soule thus seated in divine desires,

Selfe-love allurs me vnto vaine delight,

Then quenched are my former heavenly fires,

Till grace doth once againe put sinne to flight. 12

Sin and grace  
strive together.

Thus sinne with grace, & grace with sinne doth strive,

Till sin lie dead, & grace doe sinne survive. 14

### Christianus Agnus.

A Christian must  
be like a Lamb

Like a young tender lambe that man must be

Which doth professe true Christianity

With sincere heart, in imitation

First of that spotlesse Lambe, whose Passion 4

Brought sinfull man from endlesse misery

To the true center of felicity.

in innocence,  
gentleness,  
quietness,

Next, as a lambe is harmlesse, innocent,

Meek, gentle, humble, quiet, patient, 8

So must a Christian be ; his harmlesse life

Must be devoide of all malicious strife.

Reville, he must not once revile againe,

But must doe good for ill, must suffer paine 12

- And persecution with an humble heart  
 And patient minde ; yea, though it doe impart  
 The bodies death ; such martirdome shalbe  
 A glorious crowne of immortality. 16  
 Lastly, in this respect (if I not erre)  
 A lamb is a true Christians charecter :  
 The infant lambe among a thousand sheep, [leaf 51]  
 Whose frequent bleatings a loude murmure keepe, 20 and in knowing  
 Knowes his owne damme when he but heares her voice, his own Mother  
 And to sucke her milke onlie doth reioyce :  
 So must a Christian know the Church his mother  
 By her owne voice, the word of God, from other 24  
 Which are but stepdames :—Popish congregations, from all others  
 Brownisme, & Puritannicke invocation[s], by whom she is  
 Which bleat false doctrine & damnd heresies, surrounded.  
 He must distinguish from true misteries ; 28  
 And like an infant lambe, the childe of grace,  
 Sucke only from her breastes, which flow apace  
 With the sincere milke of Godes holie word,  
 His soules nutrition. Thus ther is accord 32  
 In these respectes & more, which I 'le not trace, There are lambs  
 Twixt lambes of nature & the lambes of grace. 34 of nature, and  
 lambs of grace.

### Christianus Navis.

- A ship vnto a certaine haven bent,  
 Turmoilde in Neptunes watry element,  
 With longing expectation doth attend  
 To make arrivall to his wishèd end. 4  
 This ship thus troubled is a Christiane  
 Tost vp and downe in the vast ocean  
 Of this terrestriall orbe, of which even all  
 We fitlie by the name of sea may call ; 8  
 For 'tis a place of perturbation,  
 Of anguish, sorrowe & vexation,
- The Christian is  
 like a ship tossed  
 upon the ocean,

- endeavouring to  
escape all dangers
- Like the tempestuous sea ; & is to vs  
For rockes, quicksandes, & gulfes, as dangerous. 12  
Vpon this ocean terrestriall,  
This ship, this vessell allegoricall,  
A Christian, floating vp & downe, doth strive
- and to reach a  
haven at last.
- To heaven his safest haven to arrive. 16  
Which harbour ere he can entirely winne,  
He must first passe by rockes & gulfes of sinne,  
And therefore needes good preparation  
To make a prosperous navigation. 20  
Assist me Phoebus, & I will recite
- The ship must be  
properly rigged,
- How he must riggèd be to saile vpriht.  
The earthly stuffe wherof this ship 's composit  
Is flesh & bones in order well disposde. 24  
Ships have their sides or ribbes, & soe hath man  
All tacklings else, soe must a Christian.  
The maine-mast must be love o' th' Diety ;  
The lesser ones, meeke heart & charity ; 28  
The sailes strong faith, hope anchor is assignde,  
And fervent prayer is the gentle winde  
That blowes it forward ; other tacklings be  
Good thoughtes, good wordes, good workes, which trinity  
Must all conioyne in one to holde the sailes,  
For when these stringes slip, faith then quicklie failes.
- The pilot, God's  
Word.
- The pilote which must alway be aborde  
To steere the right way, is Godes holy worde ; 36  
The sences must the common sailers be,  
Affections, slaves restrainde of libertie,  
Kept only to take paines, their actions  
Must still be ordered by directions 40  
Given by reason, which must have some sway
- All must obey the  
pilot.
- In this same voyage ; but all must obey  
The counsell of the pilot, & still stand  
Prest at his service, when he doth command. 44  
Now, 'cause this voyage cannot welbe made  
Free from all danger, but ther will invade

Some hostile foe or other ; be ther placd	
A prospective vpon the top o' th' mast,	48
Wherin 'tis fitt that carefull diligence	A sharp outlook
Keep evermore his watchfull residence,	must be kept to
And straight give notice, when he doth descrie	discover enemies ;
The force & comming of the enemye.	52
For Sathan, that leviathan, that whale,	
Who is an enemye & ever shall	
To Christian man, doth wat[c]h occasion	
When he may make his best invasion.	56
Wherefore against this foe, which seekes to kill,	weapons offensive
Offensive & defensive weapons still	and defensive
This ship must carrie, & himselfe prepare	must always be
To fight it out like a strong man of warre.	ready,
First at his beake-head he must fasten on	60
Th' impenetrable helme salvation,	
And then the breastplate of true righteousnes	
Which will resist the devill, & represse	64
His furious rage. Then faith his sheild must be	and faith will, as
To quench the balles of wilde-fyer presentlie ;	a shield, "quench
But the sword of the spirit Sathan quailles,	the balls of wild-
And to attaine the conquest never failes :	fire."
This is the weapon that the pirate woundes,	68
This is the sword-fish which the whale confounds.	
Thus if vnto the end he doe endure	
Like a brave champion, then he shalbe sure	72
The fiend will like a coward run away,	[leaf 52]
And he, a happy victour, gett the day.	Enduring unto
Then having once attained the victorie,	the end he will
He may advance his flag trivmphantly,	arrive safe in
And saile with ioy, till he the port attaine,	port.
Where in perpetuall blisse he shall remaine.	76
	78

Deum nescire est nihil scire,  
ipsum rectè scire, omnia.

Philosophers may  
search into all  
things,

Philosophers, *which* search the cause of things  
As farre as nature gives their knowledge winges  
To soar vnto ; whose quicke & ready witt  
A definition to each thing can fitt ; 4  
Though they can sillogize with arguments  
Of all things, from the heavens circumference  
To the earths center, & true reason give  
Of natures power, *which* makes things move & live ; 8  
Yet if they want faiths intellectuall eye  
First to believe ther is a Diety,  
In Godhead one alone, in *Persons* three,  
By whom all creatures are, & cease to be, 12  
They are but fooles, & they 'r still blinde, not seeing  
The Cause of causes, *which* gives all their being.

Astronomers can  
foretell many  
things,

Astronomers that can foretell *eventes*  
By the celestiall creatures influence, 16  
By errant planettes & by fixèd starres,  
Can pre-divine of famines, plagues, & warres ;  
And of their contraries pre-indicate,  
*Which* come by an ineventable fate ; 20  
Can shew th' ecclipses of the sunne & moone,  
And how the planettes make coniunction ;  
*Which* have found out, & will maintaine it true,  
Three orbes, *which* Aristotle never knew. 24

yet all their  
knowledge is  
vain, and they  
are in ignorance.

Yet all this knowledge, though it reach as farre  
As is the Articke from th' Antarticke starre,  
Is nothing, if they know not God above,  
That Primus Motor, *which* all orbes doth move ; 28  
Their art wherin they doe themselves advaunce,  
Lives still ecclipsed in black ignorance.

Phisitions *which* prescribe a remedy  
To each disease & bodies maladie ; 32

That know what is nocivous, & what good,  
 When it is fit to bath, to purge, let bloode ;  
 Although they know the nature & the power  
 Of every simple, every hearbe, & flower,  
 With Solomon, *which* from the cedar tall  
 Vnto the hisope spreading on the wall,  
 Knew every growing plant, flower, hearbe, or tree,  
 With their true vse & proper qualitie ;  
 Yet all their skill as follie I deride,  
 Vnlesse they rightly know Christ crucified.  
 He, he it is, *which* truly is alone  
 The soules best physicke & Physition.

All artes, as well those we call liberall  
 As other sciences mechanically,  
 What e're they be, & howsoever lov'de,  
 And worthily by mortall man approv'de,  
 If the best knowledge theologicall,  
 Be not conioyned with their rationall,—  
 What e're they may vnto *the* world professe—  
 All their best wisdome is starke foolishnesse.  
 He is the only wise & prudent man  
 Whose knowledge makes him the best Christian.  
 For practise must agree with speculation,  
 Belief & knowledge must guide operation ;  
 Man may believe & yet he may dissemble,  
 For even the divels doe beleeeve & tremble.  
 'Tis not enough that we beleeeve a God,  
 For this will all confesse that feele his rod ;  
 But we must alsoe in this God beleeeve,  
 And in our actions not the Spirit grieve.  
 We must beleeeve that it was he alone  
 Which gave to man his first creation,  
 And that from him alone comes our redemption,  
 Which is from everlasting death exemption ;  
 That we in him alone are iustifide,  
 And by him only shall be glorifide.

[leaf 52, back]

Physicians  
 know the virtues  
 of herbs,

yet if they are  
 ignorant of  
 Christ, their  
 skill is but folly.

The Christian is  
 the only wise  
 man.

The devils  
 believe and  
 tremble.

We must believe  
 that God created  
 and redeemed us.



	This we must trow & (though it passe our sence) Repose in this assurde confidence, Which how we must performe in each respect The Scripture plainly doth vs all direct.	72
The man who knows these things,	He that knowes this (although <i>the</i> poorest worrne) And to this knowledge doth his life conforme, Want he the giftes of nature, education, Speake he the tongue but of one only nation ;	76
though a fool in men's eyes,	Be he a foole in the esteeme of man, In worldly thinges a meer simplician ; Yet for all this, I boldly dare averre	80
has a knowledge to be preferred before that of physicians, lawyers, astronomers.	His knowledge great, & will it farre preferre Before the skill of wise philosophers, Phisitions, lawyers, & astronomers, Which either want the knowledge of the Diety, And live in sinne & damnd impiety, Or, if they know a God, doe fear him rather As a just Iudge then as a loving Father. He that doth truly know Christ crucifide, Doth know enough, though he know nought <sup>1</sup> beside ; But he that knowes him not doth only rave, Though all the skill else in the world he have.	84 90

## Ternarius numerus perfectissimus.

The number Three is the principal number.	Of all the numbers arithmetically, The number three is heald for principall, As well in naturall philosophy As supernaturall theologie.	4
Three chief causes.	Philosophers, in causes naturall, Holde that all thinges have their originall From three chief causes, or principia, And therfor say tria sunt omnia, From three all essence & existence growe, Materia, forma, & privatio.	8

<sup>1</sup> Perhaps *naught* in MS.

- The body three dimensions doth include,  
 And they are these, length, bredth, profunditude. 12  
 In mathematic bodies three things please,  
 their punctum, linea, superficies.  
 The soule, that breath of life, we threefold call,  
 Vegitive, sensitive, & rationall. 16  
 Time doth his three divisive partes endure,  
 That *which* is past, the present, & future.  
 There are three graces ; ther be vertues three,  
 Theologicall, faith, hope, & charity. 20  
 The father of the faithfull, Abraham,  
 Receivde three Angels *which* vnto him came.  
 From the fierce flames of Nebuchadnezar  
 God was the three childrens Deliverer. 24  
 Ionah, whose flight Godes mandat had opposde,  
 In the whales belly three dayes was enclosde.  
 Christ, to give man a new regenerate birth,  
 Was three dayes in the bowels of the earth ; 28  
 When he from death & hell a Victour rose,  
 Did three times visible himselfe disclose  
 To his disciples ; thrice bad Peter keepe  
 And nourish well his flock of lambs & sheepe. 32  
 Thrice was let downe to Peter in a dreame  
 A sheet, with beastes, birdes, creeping things vncleane,  
 And he thrice bidden eat, denide consent,  
 Whilest three men sought him, from Cornelius sent. 36  
 The heavenly kingdome, that celestiall bower,  
 A leaven is, hid in three peckes of flower.  
 Lastly, but principallie, above all  
 The Diety in Persons three we call ; 40  
 This Trinity it is<sup>1</sup> indeed alone  
 Which gives this number best perfection.  
 Thrice happy is that man, with ioy shall see  
 This Perfect Number, this Thrice Glorious Three. 44

Bodies have three dimensions.

The soul is threefold.

So is time.

Three Graces.

Three angels appeared to Abraham.

[leaf 53, back]

Three children.

Jonah three days in the whale.

Christ three days in the grave.

The sheet was let down to Peter three times.

Three Persons in the Trinity.

<sup>1</sup> MS. *is is*.

## De duplici adventu Christi.

As soon as man  
had sinned,

When sinfull man in Edens garden plac'd,  
By stubborne disobedience had defac'd  
The true idæa of his happinesse,  
And had deservde, for soe great wickednesse, 4  
Eternall death, loe, mercy then began  
To mitigate the punzishment of man.

mercy began to  
mitigate his  
punishment.

Though earth was cursde, & man must by the sweat  
Of his owne labour make it yeild him meat ; 8  
Though woman, whom the serpent had beguilde,  
In paine & sorrowe must bring forth her childe ;  
Yet from eternall death the promise seed  
Put them in comfort that they should be freed. 12  
To which effect the only Son of Iove,  
Out of the infinitenesse of his love

[leaf 54]

Christ made  
satisfaction for  
him.

To his own likenesse man, came downe from heaven,  
Toke flesh vpon him, was of life bereaven, 16  
And made full satisfaction by his death  
For all their sinnes, which by a lively fayth  
Lay holde vpon his meritorious Passion,  
The perfect path that leads vnto salvation. 20

Christ's first  
coming was in  
the flesh.

This Christes first coming was, which we doe name  
A coming vnto vs in grace ; to frame  
Mans soule to come to him, he first began  
To come him selfe in grace to sinfull man, 24  
From a pure Virgin to take incarnation,  
From impure Iewes, his patient Passion.

His birth was  
poor.

His first Advent yeilds a quaternall section,  
His birth, his life, his death, his resurrection. 28  
His birth was poore, that by his poverty  
We might be made rich in eternity.

He lived  
despised of man,

Borne in a cratch 'mongst beastes (yet for our gaine)  
That in heavens kingdome we with saintes might raigne.  
He livd despise of man, to get vs grace 33  
With God the Father ; meekly did embrace

- (Sole sinne excepted) each infirmity  
Coincident to fraile humanity, 36  
That he might put vs in a better state,  
And in his weaknesse vs corroborate.  
As he was man he yeilded vp his breath  
To save vs men from an eternall death, 40  
*and gave His life  
for man,*  
*Which death was full of agonie & paine,*  
That *our* life purchasd, might in joy remaine.  
Lastly, as God he subdued death & hell,  
And rose againe from the infernall cell 44  
Of conquerd Sathan, to prepare the way  
For vs to follow him ; and now this day  
Sitting in maiesty at Gods right hand,  
Sole Mediatour for our cause doth stand, 48  
*and is now his  
Mediator in  
heaven.*  
And till his second comming, shall doe still  
To plead their cause *which* doe obey his will ;  
*Which second comming shall in glory be,*  
And in vnytterable maiestie. 52  
*[leaf 54, back]*  
The generall resurrection shalbe then,  
And dust & wormes returne to living men.  
Then shall our corruptible<sup>1</sup> flesh put on  
Immortalnesse & incorruption. 56  
Then shall we see Christ comming in the cloudes,  
When some will wish whole mountaines were their  
shroudes.  
Then he the sheep from goates shall separate,  
The iust & godly from *the* reprobate, 60  
And sheepe have blisse ; the other for their hire  
Perpetuall paines & everlasting fire.  
Thus shall his second powerfull comming be  
The godlies ioy, the wickedes misery.  
Twixt his first comming & his latter one  
There wilbe found much discrepation.  
First did he come in all humility,  
Then shall he come in splendant royalty ; 68  
*His second  
coming will be  
in clouds and  
majesty.*  
*It will be joy to  
the godly,  
misery to the  
wicked.*

<sup>1</sup> May be *corroptible* in MS.

First to be iudg'd by *the* world he came,  
 Then shall he come as Lord to iudge the same ;  
 In his first comming he for man did die,  
 In this he shall give 's lifes eternity.

72

May we use the  
 first to prepare us  
 for the second!

May we the first advent of Christ emploie

So to our good that at the latter day,

His second comming, when he shall appeare,

Before our Iudge we may without all feare

76

Expect that happy sentence, "Come ye blest,

And enter into everlasting rest."

78

### In Momum.

Momus derides  
 my verse,

Momus, that foulmouthd slave, my verse derides ;  
 Sayes they are plaine, bald balladstufte ; besides ?

They want invention, poetrie, & witt,

And are farre worse then ever Davius writt.

4

Dost not thou like 'em, Momus ? Why I 'me glad ;

That *which* thou likst, I 'me sure must needs be bad.

but he has  
 wrongd better  
 men than I.

But be they soe, as worse thou canst not prove them,

I tell thee they like me, & I will love them.

8

As for thy scoffes, I neither doubt nor fear them,

Thou hast wrongd better, therefore I may beare them.<sup>1</sup>

[End.]

<sup>1</sup> The Poems end here without any horizontal line. The next leaf of the volume is the fly-leaf of another MS.

## GLOSSARIAL INDEX

(INCLUDING PROPER NAMES).

*Note.* For the extracts from Marlowe I have used Mr Dyce's ed. 1858; from Greene and Peele, his ed. 1861. For those from John Taylor, the Water-Poet, I have used the Spenser Society's reprint of the Folio ed. of 1630. Where not otherwise stated the reference is to the page. H. = Halliwell's Archaic Dict. P. = Kersey's Phillips, 1708.

A, a nightes, 90/2852.

A, a safe, 60/1813, very safe.  
To steal sands from the shore he  
loves *a-life*. *Marlowe*, 337.

Abie, 23/613, pay for, expiate.  
Thou shalt dear *aby* this blow.  
*Greene*, 259.

Abraham, 39/1158, 149/21.

Abroach, new-set-abroach-fantas-  
tique fashion, 85/2706. Fantas-  
tic fashions, newly invented, or in-  
troduced.

Adon[is], 37/1101.

Adrus, 105/3352, Dives, rich.

Advantageous, 107/3429.

*Advantageous* care  
Withdrew me from the odds of  
multitude. *Troil. & Cress.* v. 4.

Æsculapius, 69/2163.

Æsop, 136/43.

Aflaunt, 86/2726, showily dressed.

Al *aflaunt* now vaunt it;  
Brave wench, cast away care;  
With layes of love chaunt it,  
For no cost see thou spare.  
*Promos and Cassandra*, i. 2. H.

A forehand, 83/2609, before.

After-clap, 68/2126, the punish-  
ment which follows an unlawful  
act.

Ahab, 50/1501.

Alcheron, 9/188, Alcoran, the  
Koran.

Alehouse, 60/1821.

Farewell my Cowslippe sweete,  
Pray lets a Sunday at the *Ale-*  
*house* meet. Sam. Rowlands,  
*The Letting of Hymovrs Blood*,  
*etc.* Sat. 4.

Alehouse-haunter, 60/1813, a fre-  
quenter of the ale-house.

Alexander VI., 78/2436, Pope.  
Died, 1503.

Allegant, 63/1919, wine from  
Alicant.

Sweet *Allegant*, and the concocted  
Cute. *Taylor*, 549.

Boxt *Allegant* with Sugar and  
Eggs. *Heywood's Philocoth.* p. 48.  
Sweet wines . . . Tent, *Hulligant*.  
*Ib.*

Alston, 107/3442.

- Amber, greece of, 36/978, ambergris, a perfume.  
 Embalm'd with cassia, *ambergris*, and myrrh. *Marlowe*, 53.
- Amoretto, 93/2927, one who yields to "love-kindling looks."  
 How martial is the figure of his face!  
 Yet lovely and beset with *amorets*.  
*Greene*, 168.
- Cotgrave has "*Amourettes*. Loueticks, wanton loue-toyes, ticking, ticklings, daliances," &c. *Ib. note* by Ed.
- Amorphus, 97/3088, deformed, ugly.
- Anabaptists, 9/195, a sect whose distinctive tenet is, that those who have been baptized in their infancy ought to be baptized anew.
- Anaidus, 104/3332, irreverent.
- Ananias, 46/1370.
- Anchoves, 87/2769, anchovies.
- Angels, 48/1490, the name of a coin varying in value from six shillings and eightpence to ten shillings. It was introduced by Ed. IV.  
 My Lawyer said the case was plaine for mee,  
 The *Angell* told him so hee tooke for fee:  
 But yet my *Angell* and my Lawyer lyed,  
 For at my Iudgement I was damnified. *Taylor*, 515.
- Antæus, 101/3213.
- Anthony, 59/1779.
- Antilegon, 49/1487, a disputer.
- Aphrodite, 131/3.
- Apitius, 58/1765, ? Gr. *apites*, perry.
- Apollo, 41/1214, 70/2170, 103/3300, 113/1.
- Appetitually, 18/496, appetive, belonging to the appetite.
- Arch-defender, 68/2111.
- Architecture, 55/1668, heaven's architecture, the skies.
- Argus, 2/27.
- Aristippian, 136/37, pertaining to Aristippus.
- Aristotle, 29/821, 146/24.
- Arras, clothes of, 36/1044, a superior kind of tapestry, so named from Arras in the French Netherlands, which was celebrated for its manufacture. "I'll not speak another word, except the ground were perfumed, and covered with *cloth of arras*." *Marlowe*, 89.
- Assimilate, 118/78, to compare.
- Astræa, 50/1524, 88/2791, 135/9.
- Athenian, 94/2965.
- Augustin, S., 28/816, 141/7.
- Aurimont, 41/1211.
- Aurora, 113/5.
- Avarice, 41/1201.
- Avicen, 29/822. Died, 1037.
- Baal, 51/1562.
- Bacchanal, 62/1907.
- Bacchus, 63/1919, 70/2193, 87/2762, 114/29.
- Balladstufte, 152/2, worthless rhymes.
- Bavius, 152/4, a bad poet, contemporary with Virgil and Horace.
- Bayard, prov., "Who so bold as blind Bayard?" 95/3000.
- Beake-head, 145/61, of a ship.
- Beer, broken, 60/1845, spilt beer. "Remnants of beer." *H.*
- Begorde, 68/2100, covered with gore.
- Beholding, 90/2853, beholden. "And so I will, my Lord; and, whilst I live, rest *beholding* for this courtesy." *Marlowe*, 98.
- Belike, 53/1611, 73/2306, perhaps. "Staves-acre! why, then,

- belike*, if I were your man, I should be full of vermin." *Marlowe*, 84.
- Bell, phr., "Win the silver bell," 62/1884, to gain the highest prize, to beat, or excel all. See also 119/24.  
Of all the Bawdes that euer were,  
The Deuill himselfe *the bell away*  
*doth beare*. *Taylor*, 254.
- Bellie-cheer, 10/232, eating and drinking.  
Bald-pate friars,  
Whose *sumum bonum* is in *belly*-  
*cheer*. *Marlowe*, 91.  
At supper with such *belly-cheer*  
As Wagner ne'er beheld in all  
his life. *Ib.* 98.
- Bellona, 25/708, the goddess of war.
- Bereaven, 54/1638, bereft.  
My senslesse braines, of wit and  
sence *bereauen*. *Taylor*, 389.
- Bernard, S., 28/816.
- Besprent, 100/3174, besprinkled.
- Betterice, 104/3316, ? Beatrice.
- Bewraide, 108/3471, bewrayed.
- Bit, phr., "two bits," 20/571,  
two bites, two morsels.
- Bitte, 109/3500, bit.
- Blew, 60/1837, "Till the ground  
seems blue," till they are drunk.  
A drunkard is "One that will  
drinke till the ground lookes blew,"  
in Heywood's *Philocoth.* p. 44.
- Blotted, 86/2735, spotted, ruined.
- Blubbered, 100/3195. "O, run,  
Doll, run; run, good Doll; come.  
[She comes *blubbered*.] Yea, will  
you come, Doll?" 2 *Hen. IV.* ii. 4.
- Blushlesse, 115/34.
- Bolster, 37/1073, prop up, support.
- Boore, 27/763, boor, a rustic.  
Hobnaild *Boores*, & sheep skin  
country clowns. *Taylor*, 511.
- Bootelesse, 45/1325, in vain, to  
no purpose, profitless.  
I'll follow him no more with *boot*-  
*less* prayers. *Mer. of Ven.* iii. 3.
- Bord, 19/520, board, table.
- Borgia, Caesar, 78/2431. Died,  
1507.
- Bottle-ale, 62/1909.  
Away, you *bottle-ale* rascal.  
2 *Hen. IV.* ii. 4.  
One madly sits like *bottle-Ale*,  
and hisses. *Taylor*, 307.
- Bottle-nose, 98/3100, a large nose.
- Bout, 60/1832, a contest.
- Braggadocchio, 26/731  
Brane *Bragadocia* whom the world  
doth threaten,  
Was lately with a Faggot-sticke  
sore beaten. *Taylor*, 508.
- Brat, 131/1, a child.
- Bread, phr., "To know on which  
side the bread is buttered," 64/  
1987, to know what is for one's  
advantage. In Heywood's *Philo*-  
*coth.* one of the titles of a drunkard  
is, "One that knowes of which  
side his bread is butter'd." p. 45.
- Bread-chipper, 27/775, one who  
chipped the crusts off burnt bread  
(see Index to *Babees Book*); a term of  
contempt. "A' would have made  
a good pantler, a' would ha' *chip*-  
*ped bread* well." 2 *Hen. IV.* ii. 4.  
"Not to dispraise me, and call me  
pantler and *bread-chipper*." *Ib.*
- Brooke, 60/1811, to bear patiently.  
First let me ask of these,  
If they can *brook* I bow a knee to  
man. 2 *Hen. VI.* v. 1.
- Brownisme, 4/16. See p. xxviii.
- Brusano, 90/2865, one who is  
vigorous, or enjoys life.
- Brute, 26/728, the legendary  
founder of Britain.
- By, to put by conceit, 119/102,  
to undeceive.
- Cæcilius, 98/3119, proper name.
- Cain, 94/2967.
- Calidity, 117/53, heat.
- Caligula, 102/3267.



- Camelion, 118/75, chameleon.
- Can, 59/1800, a vessel.  
*Canne* follow'd *Canne*, and Pot  
 succeeded Pot. *Taylor*, 136.
- Canarie, 62/1916. "From the  
 Spaniard . . . Malligo . . . sherry,  
*Canary*, Moscatell." Heywood's  
*Philocoth.* p. 48.
- Cancer, 113/20.
- Canckered, 91/2887. Eaten with  
 the Canker or with Rust. *P.* See  
*Anat. of Abuses*, p. 111: "There  
 are three *canckers*, whiche, in pro-  
 cesse of time, wil cate vpp the  
 whole common wealth," where  
 caterpillar is meant, as in *Two*  
*Gent. Ver.* i. 1.
- Captivde, 109/3495, held in  
 captivity, enslaved.
- Carrier, Dr, 52/1583. See *note*,  
 p. x.
- Cashier, 87/2744.  
 Maymed *cassiered* Soldiers and  
 Mariners. *Taylor*, 87.
- Cast, 61/1851, to vomit.
- Cast office, 27/781, cast off, de-  
 spised, abandoned.  
 While thread-bare Martiall turns  
 his merry note,  
 To beg of Rufus a cast winter-  
 coat. *Hall's Satires*, vi. 1.
- Castles in the air, to build, 118/97.
- Catastrophe, 111, end.
- Cates, 56/1683, 87/2774, dainty  
 victuals.
- Cato, 29/824, 132/9.
- Ceres, 87/2763, 113/23.
- Cervisius, 59/1799, 61/1887,  
*Cervisia*, a Gallic word, meaning  
 Beer.
- Cevillian, 134/1, one versed in  
 civil law. See p. xvi.
- Chalk from cheese, phrase, 28/794.  
 Tom is no more like thee, then  
*Chalks like cheese.* S. Row-  
 lands, *The Letting of Homours*  
*Blood*, etc., Sat. 6.
- Chalkd out, 9/181, pointed out.  
 For it is you that have chalk'd  
*forth the way*  
 Which brought us hither.  
*Tempest*, v. 1.
- Channell, 105/3367, kennell,  
 gutter. See quotation under  
*Instled.*
- Chapmen, 43/1282, dealers,  
 customers.
- Charles V., 25/685. Died, 1558.
- Charnico, 62/1916, a kind of  
 sweet wine.  
 Well, happy is the man doth  
 rightly know  
 The vertue of three cuppes of  
*Charnico.*  
 S. Rowlands, *The Letting of*  
*Hemours Blood*, etc., Sat. 6.  
 And here, neighbour, here's a cup  
 of *charneco*. 2 *Hen. VI.* ii. 3.  
 Peter-se-mea, or head strong  
*charneco.* *Taylor*, 549.  
 It is called *charnio* by Heywood,  
*Philocoth.* p. 8.
- Charon, 72/2267.
- Charret, 63/1921, claret.  
 Claret, Red nor White,  
 Graues nor High-Country could  
 our hearts delight. *Taylor*, 549.
- Cheap, phrase, good cheap, 65/  
 2014.
- Checke, 52/1576, restraint; cen-  
 sure, reproof, or reproach.  
 Rebuke and *check* was the reward  
 of valour. 2 *Hen. IV.* iv. 3.
- Child, prov., "The burnt child  
 dreads the fire," 102/3243.
- Chinck, 61/1872, 104/3341,  
 money.  
 Both lybertie and *Chinck* ynough  
 himselfe he will allow.  
*News out of Poyntes*, Sat. 5.  
 Some of their pockets are oft  
 stor'd with *chink.* *Taylor*, 197.
- Chockt, 14/343, choked.
- Chremes, 103/3289, the name of  
 an avaricious old man in the *Andria*  
 of Terence.

- Chuffe, 26/749, a reproachful term often applied to an old miser.  
 Mizer *chuffes* who charitie doe banish. *Taylor*, 398.  
 If he but steale a sheepe from out the fold,  
 The *chuffe* would hang him for it if he could. *Id.* 494.
- Circe, 23/617.
- Civet, 34/979, a perfume obtained from the civet-cat.  
 Is not this a sweet pride, to haue *civet*? *Anat. of Abuses*, p. 73.  
 And though they were perfum'd with *Civet* hot  
 Yet wanting these things they would stinke and rot.  
*Taylor*, 549.
- Clap, 80/2530, caught a clap = met with a mishap.
- Claudia, 80/2530.
- Cleopatra, 59/1779.
- Climenes, 131/1(2).
- Clogd, 109/3496, burdened.
- Clogging, 92/2918, loading, or burthening. The noun is used in the following passage:—"I'll hang a *clog* about your neck for running away again." *Marlowe*, 59.
- Closely, 85/2691, secretly.  
 Now every man put off his bur-gonet,  
 And so convey him *closely* to his bed. *Marlowe*, 234.
- Cloy, 85/2674.
- Cocus, 48/1433, a cook.
- Codpiece, 27/758, an artificial protuberance to the breeches.
- Codrus, 49/1481, proper name.
- Cog, 137/56, to lie, to cheat.
- Coinquinate, 136/16. "To coinquinate, staine, or defile." *Minsh.* 1627.
- Cold comfort, phr. 57/1704, no relief, no sympathy.
- Collation, 88/2785.
- Collier—devil, prov., "Like to like, the collier and the devil," 98/3097.
- Comines, Philip de, 28/814.
- Commaculate, 71/2216, 96/3046, to spot, pollute.
- Commerce, 51/1537, to trade with, deal with.
- Comprisde, 85/2682, comprised to act, etc., in which the "villany" was to be acted.
- Consubstantiation, 17/473.
- Convented, 49/1472, convened, summoned.  
 The king hath commanded  
 To-morrow morning to the coun-cil-board  
 He be *convented*. *Hen. VIII.* v. 1.
- Convertites, 77/2413, converts.  
 No, governor, I will be no *con-vertite*. *Marlowe*, 149.  
 See *As You Like It*, v. 4.
- Coram, 46/1382, "Justice of peace and coram." Coram, "an ignorant mistake for Quorum."  
 "Robert Shallow, esquire . . . . justice of peace and 'Coram.'" *Merry W. of W.* i. l.
- Cornelius, 149/36.
- Corrivals, 35/1024, rivals.  
 So he that doth redeem her thence might wear  
 Without *corrival* all her dignities.  
*1 Hen. IV.* i. 3.
- Corroborate, 151/38, to strengthen. "Meates (moderately taken) *corroborate* the body, refreshe the arteries, and reuiue the spirits." *Anat. of Abuses*, 114.
- Coryate, 26/721, "was bepraised and abused as much as any man."  
 See *Taylor's Works*, *Corbet's Poems*, etc. He died in 1617.
- Cosens, 43/1282, cheats.  
 To lye, to *cousen*, to forswear, and swear. *Taylor*, 536.
- Cote, 13/316, 16/408, quote, speak about, "make a note of."  
 "He sayeth moreover that he hath

- coated* a number of contrarieties out of the Scriptures." (*Bame's Note*), *Marlowe*, 390.
- Cotten, 62/1883, to cotton, to succeed or prosper; to go right. Why, so; now it *cottens*, now the game begins. *Geo. Peele*, 396.
- Course, 26/718, coarse.  
Her with your *course* wives compare. Taylor, *A Pedlar and a Romish Priest*, p. 8.
- Cow, 26/731, coward. Cf. cowish, *K. Lear*, iv. 2.
- Coy, 59/1804, shy.
- Crisis, 24/647. "In a *Physical-Sense*, a proper Constitution, Temperature, or Mixture of Humours in an Animal Body." *P*.
- Crassus, 46/1393, proper name.
- Cratch, 150/31, a manger. "And she broght forth her fyrst begotten sonne, and wrapped him in swadlyng clothes, and layd him in a *cretche*, because there was no rowme for them with in y<sup>e</sup> ynnce." *Luke* ii. 7, *Gen. New. Test.* 1557.
- Cronologers, 100/3167.
- Cronologized, 72/2253, chronicled.
- Crosse-barre, 39/1151, an obstacle. There is probably a reference to the cross-bar, or cross-beam of the gallows.  
Out of the water shall appeare one dead,  
A halter and a *crosse-barre* o'r his head. *Taylor*, 316.
- Crumbe-catching, 135/1.
- Cue, 66/2038, 90/2879. "Cue, a terme vsed by Stage-players." *Minsh.* 1627.  
His Buckram-bearer, one that knowes his *ku*,  
Can write with one hand and receive with two." *Taylor*, 495.
- Cuffe, 43/1255, same as chuffe, *q. v.*
- Cupid, 45/1339, 93/2927.
- Curry favour, 48/1434, to flatter, gain favour.
- Cyclops, 117/38.
- Cynick-dog, 99/3143.
- Cynthia, 41/1214.
- Cytheræa, 37/1102.
- Dabbes, 77/2402, ? deceives. Perhaps the same as *dub*. See 134/11, 134/12.
- Dad, 78/2448, father.  
Thy body is the *Dad*, thy minde the Mam. *Taylor*, 232.  
The names used for food in Northamptonshire sometimes show the different classes of society:  
*Dad*, mam, and porridge;  
Father, mother, and broth;  
Pa, ma, and soup.
- Dædalus, 132/11.
- Dagon, 51/1559.
- Damon, 24/654, a Pythagorean philosopher, the intimate friend of Pythias. When Damon was sentenced to death, and had obtained leave to go and settle his domestic affairs, Pythias pledged himself to undergo the punishment if Damon should not return in time.
- Danae, 42/1252.
- Dance, plr., "goe dance for," 39/1164, to wait for, obsequiously, perhaps. Cf. "Danced attendance on," 2 *Hen. VI.* i. 3; and "I dance attendance here," *K. Rich. III.* iii. 7.
- Dareling, 37/1102, darling.
- Daunce, a Scottish daunce, 86/2716. Cf. *The Gallix Morbus*, and the *Scottish fleas* (*Taylor*, 549), which were the result of indulging in the "Scottish dance."
- Daw, 46/1380, a foolish fellow, a slattern, or sluggard. *H.* A daw to a solicitor probably means what we now understand by a "lawyer's clerk."
- Day, plr., "dying day," 62/1900, day of death.

- Day, phr., "happie day," 12/275, happiness, prosperity.
- Dealing trade. *See* Trade.
- Debaush, 58/1759, debauched, dissolute. "A *Debosht* Drunkard." *Taylor*, 335.
- Defame, 51/1541, 1556, to render infamous.
- Deianira, 66/2059.
- Demosthenes, 42/1237.
- Descride, 121/26, descried.
- Detect, 82/2569, 133/10, to accuse. These fishers tell the infirmities of men:  
And from their watery empire recollect  
All that may men approve or men detect! *Pericles*, ii. 1.
- Devil, blew devill, 107/3443. "Blue devils," the "horrors," or the remorse which frequently follows an ill course of life.
- Devil, prov., "Goe they must because the devill drives," 52/1582; "Needs must when the devil drives."
- Diana, 93/2943, 116/26.
- Dilate, 117/61, 121/22, to show, declare, open.
- Diogenes, 99/3137.
- Dioscorides, 29/821, flourished in 2nd century A.D.
- Dirges, 13/336, dirge, corrupted from *Dirige*, the commencing word of *Dirige nos, Domine*.
- Discrepation, 151/66, discrepancy, difference.
- Distaine, 121/27, 132/17, to sully by contrast.  
Her beauty glancing on the waves  
*Distains* the cheek of fair Proserpina. *George Peele*, 430.
- Distast, 100/3193, disgust, disagree with.
- Divisive, 149/17, divisible.
- Dog, phr., "A hair of the same dog," 61/1860, the homœopathy of the period.
- Dores, keep the doors, 86/2724, 2742.  
A Pander (Hostler like) that walks a whore,  
And for a Fee securely keeps the doore. *Taylor*, 215.
- Drabbes, 80/2525.  
The Devils deere *drab* must be the Church of Rome.  
That Church . . . is . . . the devils whore. *Taylor*, 503.
- Draco, 57/1728.
- Drivell, 98/3098.
- Drugo, 78/2459.
- Drusus, 37/1077, proper name.
- Dubbing, 134/11 } *See* Dabbes,  
Dubde, 134/12 } *supra*.
- Ducke, 85/2699, an endearing term often applied to a child or young girl.  
Will you buy any tape,  
Or lace for your cape,  
My dainty *duck*, my dear-a?  
*Winter's T.* iv. 4.
- "Eat to live, not live to eate," 56/1672. "The olde adage saith . . . we must not live to eate, but we must eate to live!" *Stubbs's Anat.*, ed. 1836, p. 109.
- Effeminize, 34/972, to effeminate, to make womanish or wanton, to soften by voluptuousness. *P.*
- Elizabeth, 140/84.
- Elohim, 7/112, God.
- Elpinas, 106/3410, hopeful.
- Embase, 127/16, debase.
- Emilia, 90/2877, Emily.
- Eminent, 101/3231, imminent.
- Emperie, 35/1024, empire.  
Measuring the limits of his *emperry*  
By east and west, as Phœbus doth his course. *Marlowe*, 10.
- Enable, 12/272, to encourage, to make firm, to strengthen.

- Enact, 39/1156, commit.
- Enditers, 28/816, inditers, composers, writers. Cp. "My heart is *inditing* of a good matter." *Psalm* xlv. *P. B. Vers.*
- Epainnutus, 37/1085, praise.
- Equipage, 58/1764.
- Eringoes, 87/2773. Eringo, sea-holly, the roots of which, being candied, made excellent sweetmeats: they were considered provocatives.
- Errant, 146/17.
- Estrange, 129/35
- Eulalius, 76/2385, eloquent.
- Eve, 32/915.
- Except, 9/164, accept.
- Exoration, 80/2511, a prayer, a desire or wish.
- Extenuate, 96/3042.
- Eyene, 56/1686, eyes.  
His angry *eyne* look all so glaring bright. *Hall's Satires*, v. 1.
- Fact, 48/1451, act, deed.  
And praise his gentle soule and wish it well,  
And of his friendly *facts* full often tell. *Hall's Satires*, iv. 2.
- Families of Love, 9/196, sometimes called Familists. See *Note*, p. xxix.
- Fatuo, 44/1311, a fool.
- Faune, 137/56, fawn.
- Faustus, 53/1625. Marlowe's *Doctor Faustus* first appeared about 1590. It was published in quarto in 1604, and again in 1616.
- Fawkes, 12/291.
- Fees, 27/780, rewards.
- Felt, 27/751, a hat.
- Figs of Spaine, 39/1153, a kind of poison.
- Fire, phr., "to give false fire," 122/51, to raise a false alarm.
- Flat, "that's flat," 39/1166, that is certain, or clear. "The boy hath sold him a bargain, a goose, *that's flat*." *Loee's L. L.* iii. 1.
- Flavia, 45/1331.
- Fleece, 86/2718, to rob, plunder, strip.  
To *fleece* and flea the simple wretche,  
to pylfer and to powle.  
*Newes out of Powles*, Sat. 2.
- Flincher, 59/1801, one who gives over.
- Fond, 13/329, foolish.
- Foulmouthd, 152/1.
- Fox, 58/1762, 59/1806, 1807, to make drunk. "No man must call a Good-fellow Drunkard . . . but say . . . He is *foxt*." 1635. *Heywood, Philothonista*, p. 60. "The liquor . . . would *fox* a dry Traveller, before he had half quencht his thirst." 1639. *J. Taylor, Travels*, p. 8. "You were never so *fox'd* but you knew the way home." *Ib.* p. 46.
- Fox, 64/1985, crafty fox, a clever rogue.
- Frenchifide, 80/2518, made like a Frenchman. See Ladifide, *infra*.
- Frie, "the yoonger frie," 15/386, the younger children.  
Thither went the doctors,  
And sattin-sleev'd proctors,  
With the rest of the learned *fry*.  
*Bp. Corbet's Poems*, ed. 1807, Intro. xxiii.
- Fucata, 24/661, painted.
- Fucus, 34/973, a red dye, rouge.
- Fulsome, 127/1, nauseous.
- Fume, 105/3368, angry humour.
- Fumoso, 72/2237, well-smoked, smoke-dried, smoky.
- Furder, 12/270, further.
- Gabrina, 85/2699.

Galen, 29/822. Claudius Galen, d. A.D. 200; M. Galen in 1573.

Galla, 82/2581, proper name.

Gallicus morbus, 80/2519.

The Spanish Pip, or else the *Gallican Morbus*,

Bone-bred diseases, mainly doe disturb vs. *Taylor*, 178.

The *Gallie Morbus* or the Scottish fleas,

Or English Poxe, for all's but one disease. *Ib.* 549.

Ganymede, 79/2470.

Garnet, 12, *note*.

Geason, 113/15, this word generally means scarce, rare; as,

Base Death, that took away a man so *geason*,

That measur'd every thought by time and season. *Greene*, 279.

Good men are scarce, and honest men are *geason*. *Taylor*, 404.

George, 60/1814, 61/1879.

Gives, 95/3019, shackles, or fetters.

Manacles, and Bolts, and *Gives*, Which fetter vs in bondage all our liues. *Taylor*, 291.

Glabria, 82/2567, one who loves a beardless youth.

Gogle, 98/3099, goggle.

Golde, King Harries golde, 61/1876. See *Note*, p. xxxv.

Grandams, 29/836, grandmothers.

If our Grand-fathers and *Grand-dams* should

Rise from the dead. *Taylor*, 488.

Gray-beard, 66/2038, 69/2135.

Grease . . . in the fist, phrase, 43/1269, 48/1442. "If you have

argent, or rather *rubrum unguentum*, I dare not saie gold, but red ointment to *grease them in the fist* withall, then your sute shall want no furtheraunce." *Stubbs's Anat.*, ed. 1836, p. 129.

Would now that Matho were the Satyrist,

TIMES' W.

That some fat bribe might *grease him in the fist*.

*Hall's Satires*, iv. 5.

Greece of Amber, 36/978. See Amber.

Guld, 29/838, cheated, deceived.

"But my Gowne-brother promised mee good stuffe . . . and verily did *gull* mee." Sam. Rowlands, *Diogenes Lanthorne*, sig. B. 1628.

Gull, 29/843, a cheat, a deceiver.

Gulles, 13/320, people easily deceived.

Hackny, 86/2720, hackney women, women who let out, etc., as explained in ll. 2720-1.

Had I wist, 40/1194, a proverbial phrase = had I known; an expression of regret.

When dede is down, hit ys to lat; be ware of *had-y-wyst*.

*Qu. Eliz. Achad.* p. 42.

Clad in a Gowne of mourning *had I wist*. *Taylor*, 165.

See also *Marlowe*, 201, and *Gower's Conf. Amant.* i. 105, ed. 1857.

Haire, phr., "unto a hair," 72/2244, 80/2520, to a nicety.

Hannibal, 99/3163.

Hard-favourd, 123/24.

Harry (Henry VIII.), 61/1876.

Heliogabalus, 59/1786.

Hell-bread, 45/1342, hell-bred.

Cp. *hell-borne* (*Taylor*, 511), and *hell-begot* (*Ib.* 535).

Hell-hatched, 37/1079, 58/1741.

For ther's no habite of *hell-hatchéd sinne*,

That we delight not to be clothéd in. Sam. Rowlands, *The Letting of Hemovrs Blood*, etc., sig. A. 2.

Down must tumble

The Nimrods proud cloud-piercing Babylon

Like *hell-hatch'd* pride.

*Taylor*, 500.

*Hell-hatcht* plots. *Ib.* 501.

Hell-hound, 42/1249.

Yet all their lives here they with  
cares are vext,  
Slaves in this world, and *Hell-*  
*hounds* in the next.

*Taylor*, 489.

Helottes, 58/1755, Spartan serfs  
or bondmen.

Hercules, 66/2057.

Herod, 36/1059.

Hiow, 7/98, huc.

Hight, 123/19, 124/9, called,  
named.

Hippocras, 62/1918, a beverage  
composed of wine, with spices and  
sugar, strained through a cloth.  
It is said to have taken its name  
from *Hippocrates' sleeve*, the term  
apothecaries gave to a strainer. *H.*

Hippolytus, 69/2164.

Histriographers, 100/3168, histo-  
riographers.

Hobnol, 22/604, ? a countryman.  
"Hobbinol, as most readers are  
aware, was the poetic name of  
Gabriel Harvey." *George Peele*,  
583, note by Ed. G. Harvey died  
about 1630.

Hoggishlie, 14/344, hoglike.

Homebred, 114/36.

Home-spun.

Home-spun medley of my mottley  
braines. *Taylor*, 387.

Honorius, 98/3120, pertaining to  
honour.

Horace, 28/815.

Horn, give him not the horn, 78/  
2444, don't make him a cuckold.

Houreglasse, 53/1627.

Hunger-starved, 57/1705.

Meanwhile the *hunger-starv'd* ap-  
purtenance

Must bide the brunt, whatever  
ill mischance.

*Hall's Satires*, v. 2.

Hutch, 60/1817, like lord within.  
a "hutch;" hutch means a chest.

Here the sense seems to be "like a  
lord standing among his riches."

Hypocrates, 29/822, Hippocrates,  
d. B.C. 357.

Hypolitus, 98/3110, Hippolytus,  
a son of Theseus and of Hippolyte.  
The story of Hippolytus and Pha-  
dra is well known.

I, 46/1388, and elsewhere, Aye.  
"The motion was hotly canvas'd  
in the house of Peers, and like to  
pass, when the Lord Paget rose up  
and said, 'I, but who shall sue the  
king's bond?' so the business was  
dasht." *Howel's Fam. Letters*, ed.  
1678, p. 135.

Iearus, 132/9.

Ice, 3/38, phr., "To break the  
ice," to open or commence a sub-  
ject, or conversation.

Ies, 41/1207, ? eyes, searches, ex-  
amines.

Iet, phr., "jet it," 86/2726,  
struts.

And, Midas-like, he *jets* it in the  
court,

With base outlandish cullions at  
his heels. *Marlowe, Ed. Sec.*  
(Works, ed. Dyce, p. 193).

Iet, 72/2248, a stream of water.  
Fr. *jet*.

Iezobel, 34/965.

Iframe, 128/3, framed.

"Ignorance is the mother of de-  
votion," phr., 11/244.

The woman, musing little at the  
motion,

Said, *ignorance is the Mother of*  
*Devotion*.

If Ignorance be mother then (said  
he)

Sure darknesse must her onely  
daughter be. *Taylor's Pedlar*  
*and Priest*, p. 21.

Immediately, 6/89, without the  
intervention of anything.

Imp, 46/1363, child. "An *impe*  
of Sathan, and a limme of th



- deuill." *Stubbs's Anat.*, ed. 1836, p. 119.
- Impostume, 2/12.  
The Common wealths *Impostum*  
hee doth cut,  
And the corruption in his purse  
doth put. *Taylor*, 495.
- Inchoation, 3/56, a beginning of  
any work. *P.*
- Index, phr., "The face is index  
to the heart," 23/631-2.
- Inly, 99/3159.
- Innocuous, 64/1955, harmless.
- Intend, 56/1696, fix the mind on,  
aim at.  
..... Men intend,  
But God it is that consummates  
the end. 17/467-8.  
Paraphrase of "Man proposes, but  
God disposes."
- Intret, 132/7, introit, preface.
- Invitement, 104/3308, invitation.
- Iöle, 67/1961.
- Ionah, 149/25.
- Ionson, 132/1, 17.
- Iosiah (James I.), 140/91.
- Iot, 15/401, jot, small space of  
time.
- Love (Jupiter, *planet*), 114/13.
- Irefull, 105/3376.
- Irus, 102/3241, the name of a  
beggar in the house of Ulysses at  
Ithica.
- It, 129/4, its.
- It's
- Iudas, 20/567, 44/1291.
- Iump, phr., "many jump," 127/  
18, coincide, agree.  
Master, for my hand,  
Both our inventions meet and  
jump in one.  
*Taming of the Shr.* i. l.
- Iuno, 38/1122, 93/2942.
- Iupiter, 131/4.
- Iustled, 105/3366. "A Gallant  
iustled him from the wall almost  
into the kennell." *Taylor*, 352.
- Keepen, 33/962, keep.
- Kembe, 34/979, to comb.
- Knights of the post, 49/1475,  
professional perjurers.  
A *post-knight* that for fue groats  
gaine  
Would sweare & for foure groats  
foreswear't againe.  
*Taylor*, 557.
- Lacklattin, Sir John, 43/1267, a  
term of contempt applied to an  
ignorant parson.  
This *sir John Lacklatine*, true  
course doth keepe,  
To preach the Vestry men all fast  
asleepe. *Taylor*, 493.
- Ladifide, 133/20, made a lady.  
Because his Landlords daughters  
(deckt with pride)  
With ill-got portions may be  
*Ladyfide*. *Taylor*, 42.  
Thy Female faire, adorn'd and  
turpifide,  
Should, for thy services be *Ladi-  
fide*. *Aqua-Musa*, 11.
- Landresses, 89/2838, laundresses.
- Latro, 108/3462, an assassin.
- Lazarus, 56/1703.
- Let, 18/503, a hindrance, an ob-  
stacle.
- Let, 78/2435, to hinder, prevent.
- Lethe, 131/11(1).
- Letia, 102/3238, delighting, or  
taking pleasure in.
- Levi, 76/2371.
- Levie, the tribe of, phr., 76/2371,  
the clergy.  
Cease to Abuse the Bishops, and  
the *Tribe of sacred Levi*.  
*Aqua-Musa*, p. 9.
- Lidian, 88/2800, the Lydian stone.
- Liew, 9/164, lieu.
- Lightly come, lightly go, prov.,  
89/2828.



- Lightsome, 85/2681, cheerful.  
 Linceus, 81/2563, Lynceus. See *note*, p. 81.  
 Linne, 91/2893, lin, to cease, to stop.  
     Forth then shotten these children 2,  
         and they did neuer *lin*  
     Vntill they came to merry church-  
         lees,  
         to Merry churchlee with-in.  
         *Percy Po.*, ed. Hales and  
         Furnivall, i. 55.  
 Lip-labour, 102/3252.  
 Littleton, 46/1380.  
 Loaf, prov., "'Tis safest gutting at  
 a loaf begun," 76/2393, may be for  
 "*cutting at*," etc.  
 Lockram band, 27/755, a band  
 or collar to the shirt made of *lock-  
 ram*, which was of a finer texture  
 than the shirt itself.  
     Hemspiced doth yeeld or else it  
         doth allow  
     Lawne, Cambricke, Holland, Can-  
         uase, Callico,  
     Normandy, Hambrough, strong  
         poledanis, *Lockram*.  
                                     *Taylor*, 549.  
 Loose, 17/452, to lose.  
 Lop, 88/2809, to lop off, cut away.  
 Lot, 75/2347.  
 Loutish, 58/1756, clownish.  
 Lovelock, 34/971, a pendant lock  
 of hair, falling near or over the ear,  
 and cut in a variety of fashions.  
 Lozell, 130/8, a worthless fellow.  
     Sot, I say, *lozel*, lewdest of all  
         swains. *George Peele*, 561.  
 Lucius, 36/1063, proper name.  
 Luctantia, 100/3187, *L. luctans*,  
 struggling, reluctant.  
 Luna, 115/44.  
 Lunacy, 51/1549. The MS. reads  
*lunary*. Mr Halliwell's note on the  
 latter word is :—"The herb moon-  
 wort. This herb was formerly be-  
 lieved to open the locks of horses'  
 feet. See Harrison, p. 131. Some  
 of our early dramatists refer to it  
 as opening locks in a more literal  
 sense."  
 Lurch, 46/1364, to evade, neglect.  
     There's a crue of Thieues that prie  
         and *lurch*,  
     And steale and share the livings  
         of the Church. *Taylor*, 279.  
 Lusco, 82/2571, one who is de-  
 prived of something.  
 Ly, 34/977, lye. "Will Back-  
 stead the Plaier cast his *Chamber-  
 lye* out of his window." *Taylor*,  
 342. See 1 Hen. IV. ii. 1.  
 Machivillian, 49/1467, 94/2963.  
     Thou . . hast bene a *Machiuiilian*,  
     For damned sleights, conceits, and  
         policie. *Taylor*, 510.  
     Hee's no state-plotting *Machiui-  
         lian*. *Id.* 535.  
 Mahomet, 51/1561.  
 Mair, 115/37.  
 Malago, 62/1915, Malaga wine.  
     Little were your gaine,  
     By *Mallegoes*, Canaries Sacke from  
         Spaine. *Taylor*, 549.  
 Malicing, 94/2956, maligning,  
 envying.  
     I willingly receive th' imperial  
         crown,  
     And vow to wear it for my coun-  
         try's good,  
     In spite of them shall *malice* my  
         estate. *Marlowe*, 9.  
 Manlius, 106/3398, proper name.  
 Marchpaine stuffe, 87/2773.  
     "Marchpanes are made of verie  
     little flower, but with addition of  
     greater quantitie of filberds, pine  
     nuts, pistaces, almonds, and rosed  
     sugar." *Markham's Country Furme*,  
     1616, p. 585, quoted in H.  
     They sell so deare and take such  
         gaine,  
         that well they may afoorde  
     To set fine *Marchpanes* and such like  
         vpon their seruants boorde.  
         *Newes out of Powles*  
         *Churchyard*, Sat. 4.

- Marle, 68/2130, marvel. "I *marle* in what dull cold nook he found this lady out." *Ev. Man Out of H. ii. 1.*
- Marmalade, 87/2772, a confection commonly made of quinces. Greeneginger, Sucket, Sugar Plate, and *Marmaladie* fine. *News out of Powles Church-yard*, Sat. 4.
- Mars, 26/732, 82/2590, 115/19.
- Mary (Queen), 139/82.
- Massie, 47/1422, massive. To make a Globe to serve this *massie* earth. *Taylor*, 236.
- Maudline, 64/1959, corruption of Magdalene. "With *Maudlin* sorrow . . . they have wept with very grieve." *Taylor, Apology for P. Preaching*, p. 7.
- Maw, 101/3226, stomach.
- May, 65/2010, the blossom of the white or haw-thorn.
- Meacocke, 27/783, a silly effeminate fellow. "Some are suche peasanthes and such *maicokes*, that either they will not, or . . . they dare not, reprove them for it." *Stubbs's Anat.*, ed. 1836, p. 105. "He (The Great Eater of Kent) is no puling *Meacocke*, nor in all his life time the quecasinesse of his stomacke needed any sawcy spurre or switch of sowre Veriuiice." *Taylor*, 156.
- Mechanico, 24/655, mechanic, wright.
- Mediocrity; 71/2210, moderation.
- Medusa, 23/623.
- Mercury, 115/38.
- Messalina, 77/2424, the name of the profligate wife of Claudius.
- Messe, 60/1826, number.
- Microcosme, 8/145, 92/2908. "*Microcosme*, or little world, Man." *Minsh.* 1627. I haue a heart doth like a Monarch raigne,
- Who in my *Microcosme* doth lawes ordaine. *Taylor*, 208.
- Midas, 45/1351.
- Mirre-breathing, 38/1112, having sweet breath.
- Mirrha, 82/2595, Myrrha.
- Misotochus, 99/3129, man-hater.
- Misthink, 67/2086, think amiss.
- Mollified, 45/1327, softened.
- Momists, 111, fault-finders, carp-ing critics, so named from Momus.
- Momus, 152/1.
- Moncking-stock, 5/23, perhaps for mocking-stock. "One that doth purpose to make this towne a iesting *mocking stocke* throughout the whole Kingdome." *Taylor*, 356. Cf. *laughing-stock*.
- Montaigne, 28/813.
- Mony-taker, 48/1442, a receiver of bribes.
- Mopsa, 100/3181. "Mopsey, a term of endearment." *H.* See the *Anatomic of Abuses*, p. 169. "Handkercheifes . . . borrowed for the moste parte of their *pretie mopsies* and loouyng bessies, for bussying them in the darcke."
- Moros, 28/789, *L. mos*, manners.
- Morpheus, 137/14.
- Muskadine, 62/1918, 88/2778, a rich wine; muscadel. The wind no *Muskadine* could hither bandy, Or sprightly Malmesey out of fruitfull Candy. *Taylor*, 549.
- Mutius, 100/3199, changed in circumstances.
- Nænius, 99/3153, a heaping up of praise, or commendation.
- Nappy ale, 71/2224, strong ale.
- Narcissus, 34/984.
- Nathlesse, 23/624, nevertheless.
- Neandrem, 134, ? Newman.
- Nebuchadnezar, 149/23.

- Necessity, that hath no law, 46/1379, a quibble on the phrase, "Necessity has, or knows, no law."
- Nectar, 62/1913, the drink of the gods; hence, a delicious or inspiring beverage.  
What god soever holds thee in his arms,  
Giving thee *nectar* and ambrosia.  
*Marlowe*, 53.
- Neighbour, 52/1594, 140/94, neighbouring.  
The hope of Persia . . . . .  
That holds us up and foils our  
*neighbour* foci.  
1 *Tumbarlaine*, i. 1.
- Neotimus, 38/1121, an upstart.
- Nepenthe, 62/1914, the name of an Egyptian drug which lulled sorrow for the day. Gr. *νηπενθης*, removing all sorrow.
- Neptune, 75/2353, 131/6, 143/2.
- Nessus, 66/2059.
- Nil, 120/31, ne will, will not.  
[I] left my mill to go with thee,  
And *will* repent that I have done.  
*Greene*, 264.
- Nisus, 23/645, proper name.
- Noble, 48/1443, the name of a coin. "A *Noble* in money . . . six shillings and eightpence in England, where there hath beene an old English coine of gold called an *Edward Noble* . . . worth some fiftene shillings sterling, and is the *Rose Noble* . . . as I take it, now worth seven shillings, and six pence." *Minsh.* 1627.
- Nocivous, 147/33, hurtful.
- Nonce, 60/1831, occasion.
- Nothus, 80/2513, spurious, illegitimate.
- Obeisance, 25/703, obedience.
- Obnubilate, 135/14, darken, confound, cloud over. "Immoderate slepe . . . doth obfuske and doth  
*obnubilate* the memory." *Andrew Boorde's Dyetary*, p. 244, ed. Furnivall.  
Mans vnderstanding's so *obnubilate*,  
That when thereon I doe excogitate,  
Intrinsicall and querimonious paines,  
Doe puluerise the concaue of my braines. *Taylor*, 404.
- Observancie, 89/2830, respect, obsequiousness.
- Occasion, as occasion serves, 97/3062, as opportunity offers, or presents.
- Occurrentes, 104/3307, occurrences.
- Oddes, phr., "by odds," 11/259, 62/1914. "The *ods* is, my Cormorants appetite is limited, but most of theirs is vnsatiable." *Taylor*, 483.
- Oldcorn, 12, *note*.
- On, on's, 94/2976, 2986, of his.  
Look how his brains drop out *on's* nose. *Jew of Malta*, iv.
- One, 4/9, on. This form is not common in other writers of this period.
- One, phrase, "all one with," 30/866, equivalent to.
- Opifice, 7/104, workmanship, L. *opificium*, from *opifex*.
- Orestes, 126/7(2).
- Orgia, 106/3380.
- Orleance, 62/1917, wine from Orleans. "From France Red, White, claret, *Orleance*." Heywood's *Philocoth.* p. 48.
- Orpheus, 93/2934.
- Ugly, 23/638, 37/1100, ugly.
- Overquell, 112/5, overcome.
- Oxe, phr., "A right ox," 64/1986.
- Pact, 39/1166, packed, sent; often "be off," as,

- 'Tis time, I think, to trudge, *pack*  
and be gone. *Com. of Er.* iii. 2.
- Pallas, 93/2940.
- Pamphila, 98/3105, all-loving.
- Pamphlet, 29/842. "Should I  
write all that I am truly informed,  
my Booke would out-swell the  
limits of a *Pamphlet*." *Taylor*, 74.
- Pandarus, 50/1529. *See* Troilus  
and Cressida.
- Papistrie, 4/16.  
Yea, and a church, unspotted, pure,  
From dregs of *papistrie* secure.  
*A Poem on New England*,  
*Ined. Misc.* 1870.  
I may be mannerly  
In Gods House, and be free from  
*Papistrie*.  
*Taylor, Mad Fashions*, p. 7.
- Pasiphæ, 82/2593.
- Passion, "void of passion, void  
of good," phr., 96/3038.
- Pelt, 27/752, a skin. "The Lord  
... gaue them *peltes*, felles, and  
skins of beastes to make them gar-  
ments withal." *Anat. of Abuses*, p.  
20.
- Peppercorne, 65/2010.
- Peter, S., 35/1014, 149/31.
- Phaeton, 34/995, 76/2367, 131/1.
- Phalerno, 62/1917, a wine now  
known as Falernian wine, from  
Mount Falernus, in Italy.
- Philarchus, 39/1143, a lover of  
authority, or the power which  
comes of wealth.
- Philautus, 97/3071, self-love.  
"Such as give themselves to *phi-  
lantia* ... are cholerick of com-  
plexion." *Greene*, 204.
- Philogonous, 76/2391, loving his  
children; here his flock is probably  
meant.
- Phisicall, 71/2212, medicinal.
- Phœbe, 41/1212, the moon-god-  
dess, sister of Phœbus, or Sol.
- Phœbus, 103/3295, 144/21.
- Phœdra, 98/3109. *See* Hippo-  
litus, *supra*.
- Phorbus, 102/3255, fear.
- Phrygian, 79/2470.
- Pickle, 60/1841, condition of  
drunkenness.  
Where should they  
Find this grand liquor that bath  
gilded 'em?  
How camest thou in this *pickle*?  
*Temp.* v. 1.
- Pils of Italy, 39/1153, a kind of  
poison.
- Pinne, 58/1742, phr., "not worth  
a pin," of no value.
- Pistor, 53/1601, miller, baker.
- Pithias, 24/654, Pythias. *See*  
Damon, *supra*.
- Pixes, 13/333, pix, the sacred  
vessel in which the Host is kept.
- Plato, 29/823.
- Pluto, 99/3162.
- Polte-foot, 98/3101, a club foot.
- Polupragma, 103/3305, many  
matters, well rendered in the same  
line by "Tittle-tattle."
- Poppæa, 36/1037, L. a cosmetic  
made of dough moistened with  
asses' milk.
- Pot companion, 59/1795.
- Poynts, 69/2135, tagged laces  
used in dress. *To truss a point*  
was to tie the laces which held the  
breeches; *to untruss a point* was to  
untie them.
- Praise, prov., "A man's praises  
in his own mouth stink," 37/1089.
- Pratle, 103/3306, prattle.
- Precisians, 10/213, persons who  
are over scrupulous in matters of  
religion. "I will set my counten-  
ance like a *precisian*." *Marlowe*, 82.  
"Corbet was certainly no *preci-  
sian*." *Gilchrist's Corbet*, xxxi.
- Pre-devine, 146/18.
- Pre-indicate, 146/19.

- Pre-ordainde, 101/3216.  
 Profunditude, 149/12.  
 Promethean, 67/2078.  
 Prometheus, 117/40.  
 Prospective, 145/48.  
 Protasis, 111, beginning; protasis and catastrophe, commencement and ending.  
 Proteus, 128/6, 129/31.  
 Provocatives, 87/2765.  
 Psyche, 117/29.  
 Ptolomeus, 29/823, Ptolemy.  
 Put up all, phr., 105/3361, put up with all, endure all.  
 Putrefactious, 70/2178, putrifying.  
  
 Quadruplicity, 117/43.  
 Quails, 145/67, quells, cows.  
 Quarrell, 61/1852, combat, bout.  
 Quaternall, 150/27, fourfold.  
 Quean, 36/1053.  
 Quintus, 82/2568.  
 Quite, 81/2537, requite.  
     Lose more labour than the gain shall *quite*. *Marlowe*, 17.  
 Quoted, 63/1937, same as *cote*, *supra*.  
  
 Rafe (Ralph), 60/1814, 61/1880.  
 Rape, 128/12, prey. Cf. *rapine*.  
 Ravallac, 12/283. See *n. p. x*.  
 Reassume, 126/15.  
 Recordation, 68/2108, the act of recording, mentioning, writing.  
 Recover, 100/3176, return to, reach. "I swam, ere I could *re-*cover the shore, five and thirty leagues off and on." *Tempest*, iii. 2.  
 Recure, 2/14, 130/11, to cure, heal.  
     A smile *recures* the wounding of a frown. *Venus and Adonis*, 465.  
  
 And to *recure* me from this strange quandary,  
 Hence Vsquebaugh, and welcome sweet Canary. *Taylor*, 179.  
 Regiment, 99/3162, kingdom, rule.  
     Four elements  
     Warring within our breasts for *regiment*. *Marlowe*, 18.  
 Repent, 53/1628, 142/3, repentance.  
 Repurifide, 38/1118, purged, made pure.  
 Residence, monthly residence, 102/3245. Reference to Canons of Cathedral Churches being "in residence" one month in the year.  
 Rhannusiae, 135/7, Nemesis.  
 Rhannusian, 2/1.  
 Rhenish, 62/1918.  
     No  
     . . . *Rhenish* from the Rhine would be apparent.  
         *Taylor*, p. 549.  
 Rising, prov., "A sudden rising hath a sudden fall," 39/1142.  
 Rivolet, 116/22, rivulet.  
 Romanus, 102/3245.  
 Roringboy, 47/1397, roring boyes, 62/1889, riotous fellows who took delight in annoying quiet people. "And many sat there [in the Parliament] that were more fit to have been among *roaringboys* than in that assembly." *Court & Times of James I. i. 322*.  
     Like shamelesse double sex'd Hermaphrodites,  
     Virago *Roaring Girls*. *Taylor*, 43.  
 Sometimes these disturbers of the peace were called "roarers." See *News From Hell, Hull, and Hallifax, etc.*, p. 43.  
 Rost, phr., "to rule the rost," 117/64, to have most influence.  
 Roundly, 81/2556, vigorously, without fear.  
 Rushes, phr., "picking rushes," 90/2882, idling away the time.

- Ruffino, 47/1397, It. *ruffiano*, a pimp. "She will . . . cause thy throate to be cut by her *Ruffiano*." *Coryate*, 264/4.
- Salamander, 118/76, 119/108.
- Sampson, 25/688.
- Sanctimonious, 10/224, holy, full of sanctity; used in a *good* sense, as it is in  
All *sanctimonious* ceremonies may  
With full and holy rite be minister'd. *Temp.* iv. 1.
- Sardanapalus, 59/1785.
- Saturn, 114/7.
- Sawe, 37/1088, "Saw, saying," proverb.
- Scanderbeg, 25/687. Died, 1467.
- Scilla, 82/2575, Scylla.
- Score, 81/2561, to cut, or mark.
- Scotus, 27/767, Scott, probably a fling at one of James's courtiers.
- Scullian, 133/11.
- Scurrill, 136/26, scurrilous.
- Sea, 51/1564, see. "And now I speake of Rome euen in her *Sea*." *Taylor*, 484.
- Seld, 120/5, seldom, not often.  
*Seeld* and *seldome* can they helpe to keepe the good from harme.  
*Newes out of Powles*, Sat. 2.
- Seller, 60/1829, cellar.
- Sempronia, 77/2417, proper name.
- Separists, 15/375, separatists. See *note*, p. xxx.
- Sharke, 85/2694, to cheat, to "sponge." Cf.  
The *sharking* tricks  
Of cooz'ning Tradsmen.  
*Taylor*, 210.
- Sheet, standing in a sheet, 104/3342, customary mode of punishment for a certain sin.
- Shelfe, 43/1288, a ledge of rock.
- Shend, 68/2103, 121/42, to protect, defend.
- Give laud to him that loveth Israel,  
And sing his praise that *shendeth* David's fame.  
*George Peele*, 471.
- Sherry, 62/1916.  
Gascoygne, Orleance, or the Chrystall *Sherrant*. *Taylor*, 549.
- Ship, made a ship out, 106/3411, fitted out a ship.
- Shoe, to tread the shoe awry, 81/2542, to leave the path of virtue. This is probably Taylor's meaning:—"He bade me leave prating, for I hindred him from mending Alderman Pennington's shooes, (who had gone much aside,) and that his especiall care and charge was, to set him upright if it were possible." *Complaint of Christmas*, p. 3.
- Shoes, prov., "He who waits for dead men's shoes goes barefoot," 106/3408.
- Shoone, 27/754, *pl.* of shoe, shoes.
- Shroudes, 151/58, coverings or a shelter. "They turne them [the poor] out of their *shrouds* as mice." *B. Gilpin's Sermon*, p. 33.
- Siccity, 117/54, dryness.
- Sillie, 25/710, seely, simple.
- Silvanus, 137/4.
- Silvius, 90/2851, proper name.
- Simple, 147/36, simples, medicinal plants.
- Simplician, 148/78, simpleton.
- Simpring, 29/829, simpering.
- Simula, 26/733, pretence.
- Sir, 28/807, a scholastic title, the translation of *dominus* commonly applied to priests and curates.
- Skip-iacke, 71/2219, a dandy, a puppy.  
Iacke of Newbery I will not repeate,  
Nor Iacke of both sides, nor of *Skip-Iacke* neate. *Taylor*, 123.
- Skin, leap out on's, 94/2976, to be beyond one's self with joy.

Skull, 71/2218.

Slavering, 43/1259.

She mumbled and she *slarered*,  
and she spun. Taylor, *A Peddler*  
and a *Romish Priest*, p. 20.

Sleas, 129/18, slays.

Sleeve, "pinned upon the," phr.,  
28/784.

This gallant *pins* the wenches on  
his *sleeve*. *Love's L. L. v. 2.*

Snake, 71/2221, a poor wretch; a  
term of reproach.

Snowt-faire, 34/975, contempt-  
ible, coxcombical.

Snuffe, 60/1833, a very small  
quantity. Cf.

When as is spent his credit and  
chink,

And he quite wasted to a *snuffe*.

Taylor, 214.

Sodomeo, 79/2467.

Sol, 113/19, 115/26.

Solomon, 147/37.

Solon, 38/1120.

Sordido, 26/749, sordid, dirty.

See Ben Jonson, *Every Man out*  
*of H.*

Sorrow, phr., "drink down sor-  
row," 62/1894, "to drive dull care  
away" by drinking.

Source, 113/4, souse, dip. "This  
little barke of ours being *sourst* in  
cumbersome waves." *Optick glasse*  
*of Humors*, 1639, p. 161, quoted  
in *H.*

Spare, prov., "He harmes the  
good that doth the evill spare,"  
45/1350.

Spleenfull, 97/3070.

Spring, phr., "'Tis sweetest  
drinking at the spring," 60/1830.

Spurio, 77/2421, false-one.

Spurt, 79/2494, probably an error  
for sport.

Stage-plaies, 127/19.

Starke, 147/52, mere, sheer.

Stationer, 28/806, a bookseller.  
See Taylor, 228.

Stint, 89/2808, stop.

Stolido, 45/1352, dunce.

Stones, 87/2769, *testes*.

Stound, 129/17, an instant of  
time.

Stow, 81/2544, bestow.

Straw, 5/21, phr., "Not to set a  
straw by," to hold in small esteem.

String, phr., "lead in a string,"  
76/2383.

Following their Vickers steps in  
every thing,

*He led the parish even by a string.*  
Sam. Rowlands, *The Letting*  
*of Hemmets Blood, etc.*, Epi.  
37.

String, a golden, 44/1307.

Stroke, phr., "bear the stroke,"  
92/2917.

Strouting, 89/2844, swelling out.

Sulpitia, 78/2441, proper name.

Sumner, 81/2538, summoner, ap-  
paritor.

Swinge, 71/2232, swing, bent,  
inclination.

Sword-fish, 145/70.

Tagus, the river, and its golden  
sand, 116/21.

The sands of Tagus all of burnish'd  
gold. *Greene*, 90.

Take me e're, 72/2251, take me  
to any; show me.

Tamburlaine, 25/686. Mar-  
lowe's *Tamburlaine the Great* was  
probably written before 1590. It  
was printed in Svo in 1592, and in  
4to, in 1605 and 1606.

Tane, 26/739, taken.

Taurus, 48/1449, bull.

Tellus, 41/1209, Earth, as a deity.

Temerus, 104/3318, rashness.

Tempe, 116/12.



- Tender-nosd, 112/11.
- Thersites, 43/1255. "Thersites, a deformed and scurrilous Grecian." *Troi. and Cres.*, Dram. Pers. It is probable that R. C. gained his idea of Thersites from seeing this Play performed.
- Thetis, 113/3.
- Thieues—receivers, prov., "No receivers no thieves," 89/2818.
- Thrush, prov., "One thrush in the hand is worth two in the bush," 106/3406. "A bird in the hand," &c.
- Timon of Athens, 94/2965.
- Timophila, 103/3279, love-honour.
- Title-tattle, 103/3305.
- Tobacconist, 72/2239, a tobacco-smoker.  
The smoakie black-lung puft *Tobacconist*:  
Whose ioy doth in Tobacco sole consist. *Taylor*, 511.  
See also *Id.* 214.
- Toiels, 118/82, toils, fatigues.
- Trade, common trade, 83/2626; see next.
- Trade, phr., "The dealing trade," 72/2258. "And why should not Whores haue a Mistris of their owne *dealing-trade*?" *Taylor*, 261.  
A gentlewoman of the *dealing trade*  
Procur'd her owne sweet picture to be made. Sam. Rowlands, *The Letting of Hemours Blood*, etc., Epi. 29.
- Traine, 87/2761, trick, arrangement.
- Trans, 17/473, trans[ubstantiation].
- Trencher-scraper, 27/771, a menial who works for food. Cf. Trencher-man, trencher-fly (Ash).
- Trinity, 144/32, three things.
- Troth, 2/21, tell-troth rimes. Tell truth, the phrase was a favourite one at the time. "In 1600 John Lane published his *Tom Tell-troths Message*, and his *Pens Complaint*." *Tom tell-troth* is a foolish gull to thee. *Taylor*, 237.
- Troynovant, 86/2725, London.  
Like Minos, or iust iudging Rhadamant,  
He walkes the darkesome streets of *Troynouant*. *Taylor*, 491.  
See also *George Peele*, 543.
- Tuffe, 27/752, tough.
- Turnus, 49/1465, Latin name.  
Come, now, as *Turnus* 'gainst *Aeneas* did. *Marlowe*, 39.
- Tyranness, 92/2917.
- Veneria, 83/2622, Venus.
- Venus, 77/2418, 87/2753, 93/2939, 97/3072, 115/32, 131/2.
- Ver, 126/13, spring.
- Vilde, 44/1321, 68/2120, vile.  
Goe but to Spaine, and shew thy *vild* condition. *Taylor*, *A Pedlar and a Romish Priest*, p. 8.  
This form is sometimes used in the folio *Shakespeare*, 1623.
- Virgil, 28/815.
- Vitellius, 89/2825.
- Vixen, 106/3394.
- Vncase, 82/2579, expose. In a literal sense—  
Tranio, at once  
Vncase thee; take my coloured hat and cloak.  
*Taming of a Shr.* i. 1.
- Vndermining, 44/1317, undermining bribes, bribes which procure one to commit unlawful or dishonourable actions.  
They  
Have hired me to *undermine* the duchess,  
And buz these conjurations in her brain. 2 *Hen. VI.* i. 2.
- Vnkemd, 27/760, uncombed, untrimmed.



- Her unkemb'd locks asunder tearing. *Marlowe*, 345.
- Vntemperate, 58/1763, intemperate.
- Vntrust, 69/2135, unfastened.  
See 'poynts,' *supra*.
- Vntwitten, 132/15, ?
- Votarius, 102/3271, wish, desire.
- Vp, phr., "Up and tells," 122/55, tells without hesitation.
- Vpsefreese, 60/1816, a kind of beer imported from Friesland. Cf. *upse - Dutch*, *upse - English*. "To drink upse-freeze," "to drink swinishly;" "to drink all off at a swig. This valiant pot-leach, that vpon his knees  
Has drunk a thousand pottles *vp se freese*. *Taylor*, 487.  
See also Heywood's *Philocothonista*, p. 45, where one of the names for a drunkard is "One that drinkes *Vpse-freeze*."
- Vulcan, 82/2588, 117/38.
- Warrant, phr., "A warrant scald with butter," 12/276, an empty promise.
- Warrantize, 12/275, to warrant, promise.
- Whilome, 121/37, once, formerly. Thou Saint (quoth he) I *whilome* did adore. *Taylor*, 388.
- Whipping-choer, 13/332. "Nowe and then not a fewe haue *whipping cheare* to feede themselves with-all." *Stubbs's Anat.* ed 1836, p. 111.
- Whit, "ne're a whit," phr., 100/3190, not in the least.
- Wilde-fyer, 145/66.
- Wishers, prov., "Great wishers and common woulders seldom good householders," 103/3277.
- Worser, 75/2358.
- Wreck, 97/3070, wreak, inflict.
- Ycie, 125/9, icy.
- Yclad, 30/869, clothed.
- Ycleped, 22/607, called, named.
- Yslaine, 122/56, slain.
- Yspread, 64/1988, spread.
- Yspunne, 27/753, spun.
- Zephyrus, 116/28.

## GENERAL INDEX.

- Academical honours bought, 47.  
 Acheron, angel driven down to, 31.  
 Actors prone to vice, 82.  
 Address to the reader, 110.  
 Adultery, 26, 77.  
 Advantages and disadvantages, 127.  
 Advent, the, of Christ, 150.  
 Adversity, 101.  
 Adversity, friends in, 121.  
 Ale, song on, xxxvii.  
 Ale house, from the church to the, 19.  
 Alicant wine, 87, xxi. *note*.  
 Allegories, brief, 123.  
 Ambition of Popes, 35.  
 Ambitious men, 34.  
 Amsterdam, a residence of  
   Sectaries, 11, xxix.  
 Anabaptists, 9, xxviii.  
 Angels, creation and fall of the, 31.  
 Anger, effects of, 95.  
 Appennines, the, referred to, 116.  
 Appearances may deceive, 29, 30.  
 Appetite, provocatives to, 87.  
 Apostates, the end of, 51, 52 ;  
   to Rome and Mahomet, 51.  
 Arabia referred to, 116.  
 Aristippian zanies, 136.  
 Asses have long ears, 134.  
 Atheists, the greatest offenders,  
   3; opinions of, 5.  
 Authors, various, referred to, 28,  
   29.  
 Authorship of *Times' Whistle*,  
   xiii.  
 Avarice, the beginning of, 41 ;  
   punishment of, 99, xxxii.  
 Balbutia and her victim, 134.  
 Bancroft and Whitgift, x.  
 Bawds and their devices, 86.  
 Bosworth's, W., *Chast and Lost*  
   *Lovers*, xix. *n*.  
 Bout, sketch of a drinking, 60.  
 Bragging fool, a, 25.  
 Bread, coarse, 99, xxxvi.  
 Bribery, prevalence of, among  
   lawyers, 42, xxxii.  
 Brown, R., some account of, xxviii.  
 Brownism, 4, 143, xxviii.  
 Building, gorgeous, 33.  
 Buried alive, 67.  
 Cambridge, the King's visit to,  
   134, xii, xvi. *note* 3.

- Cardinals and the cardinal virtues, 119.  
 Carrier, Dr, 52, x. *note*.  
 Chameleon, the, 118  
*Chast and Lost Lovers, The*, xix. *note*.  
 Christian, the, compared to a lamb, 142; to a ship, 143.  
 Church, why men go to, 15; sleeping in, xxx.; from the, to the ale-house, 19.  
 Churchmen, English, their neglect of duty, 14.  
 City, the, given to vice, 79.  
 Clergy, vice prevalent among the, 76.  
 Coming of Christ, the first and second, 150.  
 Communion, Holy, much abused, 17; why men neglect it, 18.  
 Conscience, remorse of, 108.  
 Consequences, fear of, 102.  
 Consubstantiation of Lutherans, 17.  
 Corbet, Bp, account of, xiv.; his habits, xv.; his writings, xvi.-xviii.; song attributed to him, xxxvii.  
 Coryate's *Crudities*, 26, x.  
 Cosmetics and perfumes, 34, 36, xxxii.  
 Country, drunkenness in the, on Sundays, 19.  
 Country lass, the, and the merchant, 133.  
 Court, the, corrupt, 79; vices and practices, 89; parasites, 135.  
 Covetousness, results of, 39.  
 Crane, Ralph, his *New Year's Gift*, xiv.  
 Crimes, all, purged by money, 42.  
 Crocodile, the tears of the, 22, 23.  
 Crudities, Coryate's, referred to, 26, *note*, x.  
 Cuckolds, 90.  
 Curiosity rebuked, 141.  
 Cydonius, Joannes, referred to, 12, *note*.  
 Dancing, 85, xxxvi.  
 Date of *Times' Whistle*, x.; of *Poems*, xi.  
 Davenant, Dr John, referred to, xvi. *note* 3.  
 Davis referred to, xi., xxxvi.  
 Death and the hyena, 128.  
 De Foe's story of the man buried alive, 67, *margin*.  
 Delicacies, numbers of, 56.  
 Desires, unlawful, 95.  
 Despair, 96.  
 Devil, the, devours man, 20.  
 Dishes, various kinds of, 87.  
 Dissimulation, 24, 94.  
 Dream, a, 122; another dream, 137.  
 Dress, value of, 43, xxxiii.  
 Drink is necessary, say some, 68.  
 Drunkards, four kinds of: (1) the merry drunk, 63; (2) the maudlin drunk, 64; (3) the lion-drunk, 66; (4) the beastly drunk, 67; must give an account to God, 74.  
 Drunkenness, on Sunday, 19; prevalence of, 57, xxxv.; effects of, 58, 59, 62.  
 Dutch drunkards, 57.  
 Eden's plot, 133.  
 Elements, the four, 116; the "qualities" of the, 117.  
 Epicureans, 14,  
 Epicures, a warning to, 74  
 Epigrams, Ben Jonson's, 132, xi.  
 Essays, Montaigne's, 28.  
 Evil is esteemed as good, 30;

- may not be done that good may come, 70.
- Fable, the, of the fox and the crow, 136.
- Face, the, not the index to the heart, 23.
- Faces, painted, 24, 34.
- Fairies, 53, xxxiii.
- Fall, of Adam, 32; of the angels, 31.
- Families of love, 9, xxix.
- Fashions in dress, 33.
- Fawkes, and his plot, 12; a martyr, x. *note* 3.
- Fear, effects of, 94.
- Fears, three ill, 101.
- Food, various kinds of, 87.
- Fools, if rich, promoted to office and honour, 46.
- Fortune, freaks of, 125.
- France and vice, 80.
- Friends, and their friendship, 120; the man who proved his, 120.
- Ganges, the, referred to, 116.
- Garnet, a martyr, 12, *note* 2; x. *note* 2.
- Gluttons, and drunkards, 58, 59; must give an account to God, 74.
- Gluttony, against, 55, 56; its effects, 57, xxxiv.; and drunkenness, examples of their effects, 58, 59.
- God, His works declare Him, 7; what He is, 7; knowledge of, 146.
- Gold, the influence of, 42, 43, 44, 47.
- Good esteemed evil, 30.
- Gossip, a, 103, 104.
- Grace in sin, 142.
- Greece, Turks in, 25.
- Grey-beard, old, 69.
- Grief in adversity, 100, 101.
- Hair, false, 24.
- Hake's *Nerves out of Pauls*, ix.
- Hall's *Satires*, ix., xx. *note*, xxii.
- Harington's *Orlando Furioso*, x.
- Harrie's, king, gold, 61, xxxv.
- Hate and dissimulation, 94.
- Heaven, faith the only means to gain, 73.
- Hebrew Rabbins, 29.
- Hell, how populated, 40.
- Henry IV. of France, murder of, 12; x. *note* 2.
- Honour, transitory, 38.
- Honours, bought and sold, 43, 46.
- Howel, quoted on wine, xxi. *note*.
- Hungary, Turks in, 25.
- Images, worship of, 13.
- Islington, a trip to, to eat cream, 82—85.
- James I., reference to, 136, 140.
- Jonson, Ben, references to, xi., xii. *note*, xix. *note*; quoted, xx., xxii., xxv.
- Joy, fatal effects of sudden, 100; excessive, 94.
- Judges are bribed, 48.
- Justice overcome by bribery, 42.
- Kent, fertile, 26, xxxi., xxxii.
- Knowledge of God, 146.
- Lacedemonian custom with drunkenness, 58.
- Lamb, the Christian compared to a, 142.
- Lasciviousness, against, 75; examples of, from history, 75; the clergy infected with, 76; the whole country defiled by, 79.

- Lawyers, plead for money, 42 ;  
     some are honest, 50, xxxii.  
 Learning gives place to wealth,  
     47.  
 Lenten customs set aside for  
     money, 48.  
 Life, shortness of, 20.  
 "Like to like," 97.  
 London, its population referred  
     to, 25 ; a huge brothel, 88.  
 Love, families of, 9 ; various  
     kinds of, 97.  
 Love-sick swain, a, 93.  
 Lust, winked at, 45.  
 Lutheran Consubstantiation, 17.  
 Lyte quoted on lettuce seed, xx.  
     *note.*  
 Magistrates neglect their duty, 88.  
 Man, definition of, 6.  
 Man, what makes a perfect, 112.  
 Marston's writings referred to,  
     ix. ; quoted, xx.  
 Marlowe quoted, xxi.  
 Mausoleum, the, 22, xxxi.  
 Memoirs, by Philip de Comines,  
     28, *note.*  
 Men, good, suffer, 5.  
 Merchant, the anxious, 107.  
 Milk, a cosmetic, 36, xxxii.  
 Mind, the passions of the, 92.  
 Miser, the, described, 26, 27.  
 Money, influence of, 42, 43, 44,  
     46, 47 ; purges every crime, 42 ;  
     souls sold for, 53.  
 Mourning for trifles, 100.  
 Murder enjoined by papists, 12 ;  
     springing from covetousness, 39 ;  
     and remorse, 107.  
 Murderers canonized, 12, and  
     *note* ; escape through gold, 48.  
 Nethersole, Sir Francis, referred  
     to, xii.  
 Nile, the, 22.  
 Number three, the, 147.  
 Offices bought, 43, 46.  
 Oldcorn, a martyr, 12, *note* 2.  
 Painted faces, 24, 34.  
 Palestine referred to, 116.  
 Pandar, a greedy, 50.  
 Papists, errors of the, 11, 13, 17.  
 Parnassus referred to, 116.  
 Passions are good, 96.  
 Pecuniary fines, 81.  
 Penances, 13.  
 Perfumes and cosmetics, 34.  
 Perjurers, professional, 49.  
 Perjury for money, 49.  
 Persecution, the Marian, 139.  
 Persecutions, the ten, 139.  
 Phrygian Oracle, the, 32, *note.*  
 Phrygians, 32.  
 Picthatch, 80, xxxvi.  
 Pilgrimages, 13.  
 Piracy, 118.  
 Plague, an incident of the, 67.  
 Planetary influences, 114.  
 Players given to vice, 81.  
 Poisoning, secret, 39.  
 Poor, oppressed by the rich, 49 ;  
     the, neglected, 56, 57.  
 Pope, the, can pardon sin, 11, 13.  
 Pope's, a, lasciviousness, 78.  
 Pride, against, 31 ; of dress, 33 ;  
     of fashion, 37 ; of good looks, 37 ;  
     of popes, 34 ; of rank, 38 ; of wo-  
     men, 33, 36.  
 Priests, popish, and lust, 76.  
 Prosperity, friends in, 121.  
 Prostitutes, haunts of, 80.  
 Provocatives, 87, xx.  
 Puritanism, 4, 143.

- Puritans, numbers of, 10; their hypocrisy, 10, 26, 141; their abuse of bishops, 10; their private meetings, 10, 11, xxviii.
- Quarrel, the man ready to, 105.
- Rashness, 95.
- Ravallac and Fawkes, 12, x. *note.*
- Reason the gift of God, 92.
- Religion, the complaint of, 138; under Elizabeth and James I., 140.
- Remorse of conscience, 108.
- Rich oppressors, 49.
- Richardson, Dr, referred to, xvi. and *note* 2.
- Riches, desire of, 103.
- Rome, apostates to, 51.
- Rose, no, without a thorn, 127.
- Rowlands, Samuel, referred to, ix.
- Sabbath-breaking, 16.
- Sabbath, trading on the, 16; drinking on the, 19, xxx.
- Safety in moderation, 131.
- Salamander, the, 118.
- Satirical writers of Elizabeth's time, ix., 5.
- Scholar, the sham, 28.
- Seasons, the four, 113.
- Sects and schisms, 9.
- Self-knowledge enjoined, 38; self-love, 97.
- Separatists, 15, xxx.
- Shakespeare's writings referred to, 109, *note*, xix.
- Shams, against, 22.
- Ship, the Christian, 143.
- Shoes, dead men's, 106.
- Simony, 45, xxxii.
- Sin, men who boast of, 104.
- Sketch of a drinking bout, 60.
- Sleeping in church, 15, xxx.
- Song, a convivial, xxxvii.
- Souls, some sell their, for money, 53.
- Spendthrift, manners and habits of a, 36.
- Spittle, the, 80, xxxvi.
- String, the world is led in a golden, 44; parson leads the parish in a, 76.
- Sunday drinking, 19.
- Swearing, 24.
- Sword-fish, the, and the whale, 145.
- Sycophants of the Court, 135.
- Syrens, the singing of the, 23.
- Tagus, the, referred to, 116.
- Temper, 105.
- Theatre, the world a, 126.
- Thief, the penitent, 73.
- Three, the number, 147.
- Timme's *Discoverie of Ten Lepers*, ix. *note.*
- Tobacco, its excessive use, 70; is it medicinal? 71; its ill effects, 71; commonly used, 71; brings many to ruin, 72; drink and vice follow in its train, 72, xxxv. xxxvi.
- Trader, the West Indian, 107.
- Tradesmen, cheating, 24.
- Transubstantiation of the papist, 17.
- Tree, man compared to a, 125.
- Truth, punishment for those who dare to tell the, 2.
- Turks, their Koran referred to, 9; in Greece and Hungary, 25.
- Turnbull Street, 80, xxxvi.
- Universities, grave faults at the, 79, 80.

University honours bought, 47.  
Upstart, the, described, 27.

Vanity, man a creature of, 20.

Venery, the blood of, 88.

Venus and the sea-foam, 131.

Verses derided, 151.

Vice and sin to be exposed, 2;  
haunts of, 80.

Vices compounded for, 81.

Vices of clergy, 76; of popish  
priests, 76; of popes, 78; in the  
universities, 79, 80; in the court,  
79; in the city, 79.

Vices of women, 82, 85, 90, 98.

Virtue, the praise of, 130.

Virtues, the four cardinal, 119.

Wapping, a place of execution,  
118, xxxvi.

Wealth, influence of, 42, 43, 44,  
46, 47.

Weever, reference to, xi.

Whitgift and Bancroft, x.

Wife, the choice of a, 122.

Wines of various names, 88.

Women, pride of, 33, 36; born  
under Luna, 115.

Work, the end crowns the, 129.

World, the, a theatre, 126.



8106

---

3

